

## Romans 1-11 – Summary Thoughts

### Table – Romans 1:1-32

- 1 *Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated unto the gospel of God,*
- 2 *(Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,)*
- 3 *Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh;*
- 4 *And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:*
- 5 *By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name:*
- 6 *Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ:*
- 7 *To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.*
- 8 *First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.*
- 9 *For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers;*
- 10 *Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto you.*
- 11 *For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established;*
- 12 *That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me.*
- 13 *Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, (but was let hitherto,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.*
- 14 *I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise.*
- 15 *So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.*
- 16 *For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.*
- 17 *For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.*
- 18 *For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness;*
- 19 *Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.*
- 20 *For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:*

### Table – Romans 1:1-32, Continued

- 21 *Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.*
- 22 *Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,*
- 23 *And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.*
- 24 *Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:*
- 25 *Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.*
- 26 *For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:*
- 27 *And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.*
- 28 *And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;*
- 29 *Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,*
- 30 *Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,*
- 31 *Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:*
- 32 *Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.*

#### Notes on Table – Romans 1:1-32

Note that this study is an overview of Romans 1-11 and a companion to the summary studies on Romans 12-16. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) for all those studies and for *Romans – The AV1611 versus Modern Cut-Ups* showing where Bible critics, ancient and modern, have aligned themselves with “...**many, which corrupt the word of God**...” 2 Corinthians 2:17 to attack the Book of Romans.

See Dr Ruckman’s commentary *The Book of Romans, Preface, Introduction, Romans Chapter One* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1486-1488 for detailed comment. See *Romans 1 Parts 1, 2, Romans 1 and the Gospel of Christ* [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 1:1-2. Paul declares upfront that he is “**the servant of the Lord**” 2 Timothy 2:24 with a particular calling though he confesses his unworthiness for it “**For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God**” 1 Corinthians 15:9. He is nevertheless firm about his focus, namely “**the gospel of God**” Romans 1:2 that God had promised “**by the scriptures of the prophets**” Romans 16:26 in that for example “**...the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD**” Isaiah 59:20. See attached note for a picture of **The Redeemer**.

Today’s believer is “**the servant of the Lord**” 2 Timothy 2:24 “**separated unto the gospel of God**” Romans 1:1 like as Paul testifies in Galatians 6:14 “**But God forbid that I should glory,**

save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.”

Concerning his own unworthiness for that separation today’s believer should keep in mind the Lord’s admonition *“So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do”* Luke 17:10 but like Paul keep his focus as Paul exhorts Archippus on his calling and ministry.

“And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it” Colossians 4:17.

2. Romans 1:3-4. Here Paul sets out on the basis of *“...Christ be preached that he rose from the dead...”* 1 Corinthians 15:12 what he declares in detail as it impinges directly on today’s believer’s eternal destiny in Galatians 4:4-7 *“But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.”*
3. Romans 1:5-6. Paul here sets out the calling of the Lord Jesus Christ in which today’s believer shares *“for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name”* Romans 1:5 and which Paul describes in detail in Titus 2:11-15 noting again the reference to **The Redeemer**, see above, and noting how this calling focuses on *“...the grace of God that bringeth salvation...to all men.”* *“For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.”*
4. Romans 1:7-8. Paul here refers to those *“beloved of God, called to be saints”* Romans 1:7 because they are among *“them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints”* 1 Corinthians 1:2, *“to be”* signifying in perpetuity because as a permanent transition *“the Father...hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son”* Colossians 1:12-13 *“To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace”* Ephesians 1:6-7 with Colossians 1:14.

Those like today’s believer *“accepted in the beloved”* Ephesians 1:6 will therefore receive *“Grace...and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ”* Romans 1:7 because as Paul testifies *“And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work”* 2 Corinthians 9:8 and *“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God”* Romans 5:1-2.

The Romans testified to their *“peace with God”* Romans 5:1 and *“by faith...this grace wherein we stand”* Romans 5:2. That is why Paul gives thanks to God *“through Jesus Christ...that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world”* Romans 1:8 as he also commended the Thessalonians for their testimony and as it should be for today’s believer.

“We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers...For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God; And to wait for his Son from heaven,”

whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come” 1 Thessalonians 1:2.

5. Romans 1:9-10. As today’s believer should be Paul was faithful in prayer for those **“accepted in the beloved”** Ephesians 1:6 praying **“by the will of God”** Acts 13:36, Romans 1:10, 15:32, 2 Corinthians 1:1, 8:5, Ephesians 1:1, Colossians 1:1, 2 Timothy 1:1 as he prays for Philemon and his household. Note again the focus on **“faith...spoken of...”** Romans 1:8 and that this prayer for Philemon and his household is undoubtedly **“...intercession for the saints according to the will of God”** Romans 8:27.

**“I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers, Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints; That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus”** Philemon 4-6.

6. Romans 1:11-12. Paul’s aim, in answer to his prayer, is that he might help establish their faith and that his would be strengthened thereby, as it was his abiding aim with respect to the Thessalonians and as today’s believer should perceive the focus of ministry when he and those ministered to **“be comforted...by the mutual faith both of you and me”** Romans 1:12.

**“For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain. But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you: Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith: For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord”** 1 Thessalonians 3:5-8.

7. Romans 1:13-17. Paul’s focus here is **“to preach...the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth...For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, the just shall live by faith”** Romans 1:15-17, that is from Habakkuk 2:4 **“by his faith”** to **“by faith”** Romans 1:17, Galatians 3:11, Hebrews 10:38 that is **“...the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me”** Galatians 2:20.

**“The gospel of Christ...is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth”** Romans 1:16 because **“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved”** Acts 4:12.

**“The gospel of Christ”** is the particular Gospel for the Church Age. It is the Gospel that today’s believer should preach according to Acts 1:8 **“But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.”**

See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) and attached extracts from *Romans 1 and the Gospel of Christ* pp 1-2 and *Ten Gospels – or Twelve, The Sixth Gospel* pp 6-7. Note Paul’s evaluation of **“the gospel of Christ”** Romans 1:16 that should always be kept in mind.

**“But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ”** Galatians 1:11-12.

8. Romans 1:18-32. Paul concludes this chapter by contrasting **“the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith”** Romans 1:17 with **“...the wrath of God...revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness”** Romans 1:18. Nowhere is this ungodliness more apparent than with **“the sin of Sodom”** Lamentations 4:6 and **“...many, which corrupt the word of God...”** 2 Corinthians 2:17 in order to cover up for the sodomite child molesters. See the attached study **“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20.**

Paul states further that **“...that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them...being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse”** Romans 1:19-20 and the Lord Jesus Christ confirmed Paul’s testimony with respect to a later city than Sodom. **“And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day”** Matthew 11:23.

God’s wrath is righteous, therefore, against them **“...that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened...Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen”** Romans 1:21, 25.

God’s wrath is righteous, therefore, because Paul’s list of evils that men commit and even encourage, Romans 1:26-32, including **“the sin of Sodom”** Lamentations 4:6 that is **“...vile affections...the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet”** Romans 1:26-27 are **“the works of the flesh...Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revelings, and such like...”** Galatians 5:19-21.

The Lord Jesus Christ identified where **“the works of the flesh”** Galatians 5:19 emanate from and why therefore the Lord is right to inflict judgement upon men as He promises to do in Isaiah 13:11-12 **“And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible. I will make a man more precious than fine gold; even a man than the golden wedge of Ophir.”**

**“And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man”** Mark 7:20-23.

In sum, that is why today’s believer should be as Paul exhorts the Ephesians **“...as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart”** Ephesians 6:6 and the Colossians **“...in singleness of heart, fearing God”** Colossians 3:22.

## Table – Romans 2:1-29

- 1 *Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things.*
- 2 *But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.*
- 3 *And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?*
- 4 *Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?*
- 5 *But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;*
- 6 *Who will render to every man according to his deeds:*
- 7 *To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:*
- 8 *But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,*
- 9 *Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;*
- 10 *But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:*
- 11 *For there is no respect of persons with God.*
- 12 *For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;*
- 13 *(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.*
- 14 *For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves:*
- 15 *Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)*
- 16 *In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.*
- 17 *Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God,*
- 18 *And knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law;*
- 19 *And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,*
- 20 *An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.*
- 21 *Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?*

Table – Romans 2:1-29, Continued

- 22 *Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?*
- 23 *Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?*
- 24 *For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.*
- 25 *For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.*
- 26 *Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?*
- 27 *And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law?*
- 28 *For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:*
- 29 *But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.*

Notes on Table – Romans 2:1-29

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Two* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1203-1204, 1487-1488 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 2 Parts 1, 2](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%20Parts%201,%202) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 2:1-3. With reference to Romans 1:18-32, see remarks earlier, Paul is firm that *“the judgment of God”* Romans 1:32, 2:2, 3 indeed *“the righteous judgement of God”* Romans 2:5, 2 Thessalonians 2:5 *“is according to truth against them which commit such things”* Romans 2:2, those who *condone* or indeed *commend* such things, Romans 1:32 and those *“that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same”* Romans 2:3 *“For there is no respect of persons with God”* Romans 2:11 as Job and Isaiah make clear with respect to the groups of evildoers that Paul has identified, both the exhibitionists and the image-projectors both equally with *“The heart...deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked”* Jeremiah 17:9.

*“For the congregation of hypocrites shall be desolate, and fire shall consume the tabernacles of bribery”* Job 15:34.

That group is like the Catholic Church. See attached studies *“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20* and *Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom*. John states of Rome *“Wherefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her”* Revelation 18:8.

*“The shew of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto their soul! for they have rewarded evil unto themselves”* Isaiah 3:9.

That group consists of the blatant evildoers such as the sodomites of whom Jude states *“Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire”* Jude 7.

In sum as Paul states:

*“Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some men they follow after”* 1 Timothy 5:24.



Today's believer should always be grateful that his sins have in effect gone before to judgement upon the Lord Jesus Christ – noting that God has no archbishops – **“Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls”** 1 Peter 2:24-25.

2. **Romans 2:4-6.** The scripture shows that men habitually despise **“...the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering...”** and bring down upon themselves **“...wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; Who will render to every man according to his deeds”** Romans 2:4, 5-6.

They despised God's goodness **“...when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water”** 1 Peter 3:20 God **“...bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly”** 2 Peter 2:5.

They will despise God's goodness that when spared of God's wrath in the **“...great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be”** Matthew 24:21 **“...the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts”** Revelation 9:20-21.

The Lord then **“will render to every man according to his deeds”** Romans 2:6 as Jude states with the reminder that **“...Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him”** Jude 14-15.

Paul says for today's believer **“For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ”** 1 Thessalonians 5:9 but today's believer should aim to keep short accounts with God by following Paul with respect to Acts 24:16 **“And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.”**

3. **Romans 2:7-11.** Paul here draws a sharp contrast between men with respect not to their persons **“For there is no respect of persons with God”** Romans 2:11 but with respect to their heart attitude as James admonishes his readers **“My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons”** James 2:1, which determines God's response to them. Note the examples of Cornelius versus Herod.

**“There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band, A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway. He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius. And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter: He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do...Then answered Peter, Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord...”** Acts 10:1-6, 46-48.

**“And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost”** Acts 12:21-23.



Today's believer should therefore follow King Solomon's admonition.

**"Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life"** Proverbs 4:23.

4. **Romans 2:12-16.** Insofar as **"For there is no respect of persons with God"** Romans 2:11 then the Jews that **"...dealt proudly, and hearkened not unto thy commandments, but sinned against thy judgments, (which if a man do, he shall live in them;) and withdrew the shoulder, and hardened their neck, and would not hear"** Nehemiah 9:29 fall under Romans 2:12-13 where **"...as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified."** The Gentile like Herod who **"...gave not God the glory..."** Acts 12:23 - see point 3 above - or Belshazzar of whom Daniel said **"And thou...O Belshazzar, hast not humbled thine heart... But hast lifted up thyself against the Lord of heaven; and they have brought the vessels of his house before thee, and thou, and thy lords, thy wives, and thy concubines, have drunk wine in them; and thou hast praised the gods of silver, and gold, of brass, iron, wood, and stone, which see not, nor hear, nor know: and the God in whose hand thy breath is, and whose are all thy ways, hast thou not glorified"** Daniel 5:22-23 falls under Romans 2:12 **"...as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law..."** because he went against Romans 2:15 **"...the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness..."**

The Lord Jesus Christ is Judge in each case in accordance with Romans 2:16 **"...God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel"** because **"...the Father...hath committed all judgment unto the Son"** John 5:22.

See attached study [Not One but Ten Gospels in Scripture](#) with respect to [The seventh gospel...](#)the entire body of sound doctrine that Paul wrote for the church age and which he termed **"my gospel"** Romans 2:16 and **"the glorious gospel of the blessed God"** 1 Timothy 1:10-11.

Today's believer has a responsibility therefore to make known to unbelievers that **"...as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment"** Hebrews 9:27 noting Peter's admonition that **"...if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?"** 1 Peter 4:18. John answers that question. **"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire"** Revelation 20:15.

5. **Romans 2:17-24.** Of the evil that Paul describes in this passage committed by those **"...as have sinned in the law...being instructed out of the law"** Romans 2:12, 18 the outstanding case is King David to whom Nathan declares **"Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon...by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme..."** 2 Samuel 12:9, 14.

Today's believer should therefore always seek to maintain 1 Thessalonians 4:11-12 **"...that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you; That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing."**

6. **Romans 2:25-29.** Paul draws a sharp distinction in this passage with respect to **"...he is not a Jew..."** Romans 2:28 and **"...he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God."**

God has always urged that inward heart attitude for His people in order for them to draw close to Him. Such passages apply for today's believer.

**"Circumcise therefore the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiffnecked"** Deuteronomy 10:16.

**“For all those things hath mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the LORD: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word”** Isaiah 66:2. Few do.

**“I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings...And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart”** Jeremiah 17:10, 29:13.

Paul effectively sums up Romans 2 in his exhortation to Timothy and indeed to today's believer, whatever his age or youth. **“Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity”** 1 Timothy 4:12.

## Table – Romans 3:1-31

- 1 *What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?*
- 2 *Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.*
- 3 *For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?*
- 4 *God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.*
- 5 *But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)*
- 6 *God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?*
- 7 *For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?*
- 8 *And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.*
- 9 *What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;*
- 10 *As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:*
- 11 *There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.*
- 12 *They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.*
- 13 *Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips:*
- 14 *Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:*
- 15 *Their feet are swift to shed blood:*
- 16 *Destruction and misery are in their ways:*
- 17 *And the way of peace have they not known:*
- 18 *There is no fear of God before their eyes.*
- 19 *Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.*
- 20 *Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.*
- 21 *But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;*
- 22 *Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:*
- 23 *For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;*
- 24 *Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:*

Table – Romans 3:1-31, Continued

25	<i>Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;</i>
26	<i>To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.</i>
27	<i>Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.</i>
28	<i>Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.</i>
29	<i>Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:</i>
30	<i>Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.</i>
31	<i>Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.</i>

## Notes on Table – Romans 3:1-31

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Three* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1488-1489 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 3 Parts 1, 2](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%203%20Parts%201,%202) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 3:1-2. Paul here confirms that the writers of the scriptures were Jewish as these scriptures exemplify.

*“And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the words of this law in a book, until they were finished, That Moses commanded the Levites, which bare the ark of the covenant of the LORD, saying, Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the LORD your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee”* Deuteronomy 31:24-26.

*“And Joshua wrote these words in the book of the law of God, and took a great stone, and set it up there under an oak, that was by the sanctuary of the LORD”* Joshua 24:26.

*“The preacher sought to find out acceptable words: and that which was written was upright, even words of truth”* Ecclesiastes 12:10.

*“Thus speaketh the LORD God of Israel, saying, Write thee all the words that I have spoken unto thee in a book”* Jeremiah 30:2.

Today's believer should always be a friend of Israel because as *“salvation is of the Jews”* John 4:22 so are *“the true sayings of God”* Revelation 19:9 and it is therefore *“of the Jews”* that as Paul exhorted the Jews of the synagogue of *“Antioch of Pisidia”* Acts 13:14 and today's believer *“Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent”* Acts 13:26.

2. Romans 3:3-4. Paul, citing Psalm 51:4 *“...that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, and be clear when thou judgest”* in Romans 3:4 *“...yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged”* is matching Isaiah's declaration applicable to all men versus *“the word of our God.”* *“The voice said, Cry. And he said, What shall I cry? All flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field: The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: because the spirit of the LORD bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass. The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever”* Isaiah 40:6-8.

3. Romans 3:5-8. Paul is here countering the false notions man's unrighteousness is excusable because "...our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God..." Romans 3:5 and that evil is a means of good i.e. "(as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just" e.g. noting that Abram and Sarai failed where David did right:

"And Sarai said unto Abram, Behold now, the LORD hath restrained me from bearing: I pray thee, go in unto my maid; it may be that I may obtain children by her. And Abram hearkened to the voice of Sarai" Genesis 16:2.

"Then said Abishai to David, God hath delivered thine enemy into thine hand this day: now therefore let me smite him, I pray thee, with the spear even to the earth at once, and I will not smite him the second time. And David said to Abishai, Destroy him not: for who can stretch forth his hand against the LORD'S anointed, and be guiltless?" 1 Samuel 26:8-9.

The law shows that man's unrighteousness is wholly inexcusable because "...the law entered, that the offence might abound..." Romans 5:20 and therefore John gives answer to the question "Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance?" Romans 3:5 "And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments" Revelation 16:7.

Evil is never a means of good because Isaiah states "Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!" Isaiah 5:20 e.g. Catholics, sodomites and feminazis. See attached studies **"The Cry of Sodom" – Genesis 18:20**, Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom, **The 1611 Holy Bible versus sodomite Peter J. Gomes** and AV1611 Advanced Revelations and *Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 and modern feminism or feminazism*.

As James states "Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh" James 3:11-12.

Today's believer should therefore understand and apply Romans 12:9 "Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good."

4. Romans 3:9-18. King Solomon sums up the litany of evil that Paul describes for "both Jews and Gentiles" Romans 3:9 citing Psalm 5:9, 14:1-3, 36:1, 53:1-3, 140:3, 59:7-8. "...yea, also the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead" Ecclesiastes 9:3. See studies listed under point 3 for the evil that men do and the attached study **The KJB King James Bible, Britain and Islam**.

The above studies do not explicitly address the Jew but the Lord does through Ezekiel, showing that the Jews sinned worse than anyone else. "And of thy garments thou didst take, and deckedst thy high places with divers colours, and playedst the harlot thereupon: the like things shall not come, neither shall it be so" Ezekiel 16:16.

Paul has shown that men do evil because "There is no fear of God before their eyes" Romans 3:18. Note therefore these scriptures, with on-going application as today's believer should keep in mind. It is by "mercy of the LORD" Psalm 103:17, 1 Corinthians 7:25, 2 Timothy 1:18 and "the truth of Christ" 2 Corinthians 11:10 that "By mercy and truth iniquity is purged." See attached study **The Redeemer** and **Isaiah 53:5** **"But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed."**

John Lennon [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John\\_Lennon](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Lennon) believes these scriptures now.

**“And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding”** Job 28:28.

**“The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath”** Proverbs 15:24.

**“By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the LORD men depart from evil”** Proverbs 16:6.

5. **Romans 3:19-20. “...every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God”** Romans 3:19 because Jews **“Who have received the law by the disposition of angels...have not kept it”** Acts 7:53 and Gentiles **“...when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened”** Romans 1:21.

Paul’s statement **“Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight”** Romans 3:20 then sums up this passage as he states in Hebrews 10:1 **“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.”** That is why Paul then states what he will develop further in Romans 3 with respect to the Lord Jesus Christ and which applies to today’s believer now. **“Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me...By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all”** Hebrews 10:5, 10.

6. **Romans 3:21-28. Paul sums up this passage in Romans 3:21-22 “But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested...Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:”**

This righteousness **“being witnessed by the law and the prophets”** Romans 3:21 is above all a Person according to Genesis 49:10-11 **“The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a law-giver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Binding his foal unto the vine, and his ass’s colt unto the choice vine; he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes”** Genesis 49:10-11 and Isaiah 53:10-11 **“Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.”**

That is why Paul states with respect to **“...the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe...”** Romans 3:22 concerning the Lord Jesus Christ insofar as He is **“Jesus Christ the righteous”** 1 John 2:1 **“Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness...that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus”** Romans 3:25.

Paul declares **“Where is boasting then?...by the law of faith. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law”** Romans 3:27-28 and he therefore testifies as should today’s believer **“But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world”** Galatians 6:14.



See attached study **Propitiation**. Today's believer having followed the apostles' exhortation "...Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved..." Acts 16:31 may then have the twin assurance "Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot" 1 Peter 1:18-19 and "...of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption" 1 Corinthians 1:30.

7. Romans 3:29-31. Paul concludes this chapter by assuring his readers both Jew and Gentile that "...it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith" Romans 3:30 as he will unequivocally declare later in the Book "For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved" Romans 10:12-13.

Note finally with respect to Romans 3:31 "Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law" Paul's explanation "Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus" Galatians 3:24-26.

As a reminder to today's believer with respect to what he has been saved *from* and saved *unto* and the attendant responsibility Paul effectively sums up Romans 3 as follows, noting "For by grace are ye saved through faith;...the gift of God" Ephesians 2:8.

"Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified" Galatians 2:16.

"For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light" Ephesians 5:8.



## Table – Romans 4:1-25

- 1 *What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?*
- 2 *For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.*
- 3 *For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.*
- 4 *Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.*
- 5 *But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.*
- 6 *Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,*
- 7 *Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.*
- 8 *Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.*
- 9 *Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.*
- 10 *How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.*
- 11 *And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:*
- 12 *And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.*
- 13 *For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.*
- 14 *For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:*
- 15 *Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.*
- 16 *Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,*
- 17 *(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.*
- 18 *Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.*
- 19 *And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's womb:*

**Table – Romans 4:1-25, Continued**

- 20 *He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;*
- 21 *And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.*
- 22 *And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.*
- 23 *Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him;*
- 24 *But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;*
- 25 *Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.*

**Notes on Table – Romans 4:1-25**

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Four* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1489-1491 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 4](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%204) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 4:1-3. Paul illustrates justification i.e. being perceived by God as righteous before God by faith by means of Abraham, by citing Genesis 15:6 **“And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness”** with Romans 4:3 **“...Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.”** Note in that context Romans 4:22 **“And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness”** because *as today's believer should* Abraham believed Jeremiah 32:27 **“Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for me?”**

Righteousness before God by **“belief of the truth”** is germane to today's believer as Paul explains to the Thessalonians. **“But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth”** 2 Thessalonians 2:13.

2. Romans 4:4-8. Paul, citing David, Psalm 32:1-2, here introduces another key word for salvation, namely *imputation*, showing that it is the opposite of earned reward through works being instead the outcome of **“belief of the truth”** as Peter states **“Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls”** 1 Peter 1:9. **“Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works...and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin”** Romans 4:6-8.

Imputation has the sense of *gifting* which is itself **“without works”** in that God *gifteth* or **“God imputeth righteousness without works”** Romans 4:6. The man is therefore **“Blessed...to whom the Lord will not impute sin”** Romans 4:8 because these have been *imputed* or *gifted to the Lord Jesus Christ* **“Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed”** 1 Peter 2:24.

See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php) *Answers to the Wolf-Man Part 1* pp 21-22 and this extract with respect to the term *impute* and its associated terms as they occur in Romans 4:6, 8, 11, 22, 23, 24, no fewer than 6 times in this one chapter of Romans of the 15 occurrences of the term *impute* and its derivatives in scripture.

The expression “*imputed to*” occurs only one other time in scripture apart from Romans 4:22, in the very next verse.

“Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him;” Romans 4:23.

However, the following verses in Romans 4 are essential for understanding the term “*imputed to*” and its implications for the believer.

“But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness” Romans 4:5.

“Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered” Romans 4:6-7.

“Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin” Romans 4:8.

“And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:” Romans 4:11.

“But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;” Romans 4:24.

“Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification” Romans 4:25.

The explanation of the expression “*imputed to*” is as follows.

Apart from “*Jesus Christ the righteous*” 1 John 2:1, “*There is none righteous, no, not one:*” Romans 3:10. However “*to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly*” i.e. anyone among those of whom Paul says “*by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ*” Galatians 2:16, “*his faith is counted for righteousness.*”

That faith is “*the faith of Jesus Christ*” Galatians 2:16, 20 and “*it is the gift of God*” Ephesians 2:8 for “*him that...believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly.*” That faith, within the believer, is “*counted for*” or made identical to “*the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:*” 2 Peter 1:1 for the believer *positionally* for “*any man...in Christ*” 2 Corinthians 5:17, which is the position, *spiritually*, for “*him that...believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly.*”

That position of *righteousness identical to “the faith of Jesus Christ,”* which is “*the gift of God,*” is “*the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works.*” “*The gift of God*” therefore equates to *imputed righteousness for the believer.* It is a blessed gift.

“*The gift of God*” as *imputed righteousness* is therefore the expression used in Romans 4:11 with respect to “*all them that believe...that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:*”

That gift is a *doubly blessed gift* because as Romans 4:8 states “Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin” with respect to “*the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works.*” That man is doubly blessed because God imputed or ‘gifted’ that man’s sin to the Lord Jesus Christ. See 2 Corinthians 5:21 again.

“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”

In anticipation of the reader’s thought with respect to belief, Paul therefore concludes the chapter with a full statement of what constitutes belief to receive “*the gift of God*” of “*righteousness...imputed*” in Romans 4:24-25.

With reference to believers, Paul states “to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.”

The expression “imputed to” with respect to righteousness is therefore equivalent to *gifted to with respect to God’s righteousness, with the sin of the recipient at the same time ‘gifted’ or imputed to the Lord Jesus Christ.*

“Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift” 2 Corinthians 9:15.

3. Romans 4:9-16. Paul’s essential point in that passage is “...that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness...Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision...that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also” Romans 4:9-11.

This gift of imputed righteousness “Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe” Romans 3:22 is therefore not limited to the Jews i.e. not limited to “the circumcision only” Romans 4:12 “For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: Because the law worketh wrath...” Romans 4:14-15 “...for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified” Galatians 2:16.

Concerning Abraham in Romans 4:11, 17, 19-21 with God “whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were...And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised...And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sara’s womb: He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform” and in Hebrews 11:12 “Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable” Abraham typifies spiritually the Lord by faith “...in bringing many sons unto glory...” Hebrews 2:10 insofar as Paul declares defining a New Testament Christian “I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me” Galatians 2:20.

Moreover, Abraham typifies the Christian, for which Abraham and Sarah had to be “...as good as dead...” because as Paul states of today’s believers especially “...that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead” 2 Corinthians 1:9 and with reference to spiritual circumcision. That circumcision is not limited to the Jews i.e. not limited to “the circumcision only” Romans 4:12:

“And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins” Ephesians 2:1.

“And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses” Colossians 2:10-13.

Paul therefore concludes for this passage with respect to “...the faith of Abraham...” that typifies “...the faith of the Son of God...” Galatians 2:20 “...in bringing many sons unto glory...the captain of their salvation perfect through suffering” Hebrews 2:10 for both Jew and Gentile “Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all” Romans 4:16.

**“...of us all”** it is encouraging that at the Second Advent **“Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father...”** Matthew 13:43.

4. **Romans 4:17-21.** See remarks under point 3 with respect to Romans 4:17, 19-21, noting with respect to Romans 4:18 **“Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be”** Abraham’s hope, as today’s believer’s should, rested wholly upon what God *said*, as the Lord promised Jeremiah. **“Then said the LORD unto me, Thou hast well seen: for I will hasten my word to perform it”** Jeremiah 1:18.
5. **Romans 4:22-25.** See remarks under point 1 with respect to Romans 4:22 and under point 2 on imputation with respect to Romans 4:22, 23, 24, 25. *Note in particular though* in this passage Paul’s definitive statement on **“the gospel of Christ”** Romans 1:16 with respect to **“righteousness...for us also, to whom shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification”** Romans 4:22, 24-25. **“Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them”** Hebrews 7:25.

Romans 4 can be summed up by James’ evaluation of the kind of relationship that grew between God and Abraham that today’s believer, whether Jew or Gentile, should aim for, faith, righteousness, friendship with God *and fulfilment of* **“the scripture of truth”** Daniel 10:21.

**“And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God”** James 2:23.

## Table - Romans 5:1-21

- 1 *Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:*
- 2 *By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.*
- 3 *And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience;*
- 4 *And patience, experience; and experience, hope:*
- 5 *And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*
- 6 *For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.*
- 7 *For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.*
- 8 *But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.*
- 9 *Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.*
- 10 *For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.*
- 11 *And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.*
- 12 *Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:*
- 13 *(For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.*
- 14 *Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.*
- 15 *But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.*
- 16 *And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.*
- 17 *For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)*
- 18 *Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.*
- 19 *For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.*
- 20 *Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:*



**Table - Romans 5:1-21, Continued**

- 21 *That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.*

**Notes on Table – Romans 5:1-21**

See Dr Ruckman’s commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Five* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1491-1492 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 5 Parts 1, 2](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%205%20Parts%201,%202) for additional thoughts.

Romans 5 could be called *The Atonement Chapter*. The only time the word “*atonement*” appears in the New Testament it appears with respect to *at-one-ment* or *reconciliation* in the scripture that effectively sums up the chapter, Romans 5:11 “*And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.*”

1. Romans 5:1-5. Paul here speaks further of the outcomes for those “*being justified by faith*” Romans 5:1 i.e. now and always, which is as Peter says in Acts 2:21 “*...that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved*” and John testifies with respect to “*...Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood*” in Revelation 1:5 neither apostle with any hint of works, justification being a full clearing of the individual from sin without works on the part of the believer, whom God thereby formally declares righteous by means of “*Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference*” Romans 3:22, the believer “*Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood...that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus*” Romans 3:24-26.

The first outcome is that “*...we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ*” Romans 3:1 and “*peace with God*” is a Person bringing together or reconciling two warring parties insofar as “*But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace...that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby*” Ephesians 2:13-14, 16.

The next outcome “*through our Lord Jesus Christ*” Romans 5:1 is that “*we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God*” Romans 5:2 because “*...God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus*” Ephesians 2:4-7.

Therefore as Paul says “*For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day*” 2 Corinthians 4:16.

2. Romans 5:3-5. Paul therefore states in the light of the outcomes of “*being justified by faith*” Romans 5:1 “*...we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience*” Romans 5:3 in that those ordeals engender “*...hope: And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us*” Romans 5:4-5.

Unashamed hope and love shed abroad were the testimony of Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain brought forth by the greatest of ordeals. See attached study “**STAND FIRM, YE BOYS FROM MAINE**” and note Paul’s testimony with respect to hope for the steadfastness of others and love for them that impelled him to write to them, that love eclipsing the sense of tribulation, the nature of which testimony today’s believer should aim for.



**“And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation. For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life: But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead...For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you”** 2 Corinthians 1:7-10, 2:4.

3. Romans 5:6-8. Paul’s statement **“For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly...But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us”** Romans 5:6, 8 is a summary of his statements to the Ephesians that **“...we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others...Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart”** Ephesians 2:3, 4:18 **“But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)...now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ”** Ephesians 2:3-5, 13.

This was **“in due time”** Romans 5:6 in that as Paul states to the Corinthians, beginning with an exhortation that is applicable to today’s believer’s ministry, noting that God’s timing for the offer of salvation is **“due”** or *perfect* and the sinner’s timing for reception of it is **“due”** in that it should be *immediate*. **“We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain. (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)”** 2 Corinthians 6:1-2.

Today’s believer in the light of Romans 5:6-8 should always remember what he *was* and now *is* and *where* he was and now *is* thanks to **“the day of salvation”** 2 Corinthians 6:2. **“For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit”** 1 Peter 3:18.

4. Romans 5:9-11. Romans 5:9 **“Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him”** declares what Paul states for the Thessalonian Church but is a promise for all saved individuals today according as John has said of the Lord Jesus Christ **“...Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood”** in Revelation 1:5. **“For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ”** 1 Thessalonians 5:9 as Paul states to the Colossians and to all of today’s believers **“When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory”** Colossians 3:4.

Romans 5:10, see remarks under point 3 above, **“For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life”** introduces reconciliation or **“atonement”** in the sense of *at-one-ment* that Romans 5:11 expresses **“And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.”** See remarks at the beginning of this chapter and this extract from under point 1 showing *why* Romans 5:11 is so pivotal for today’s believer.

The first outcome is that **“...we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ”** Romans 3:1 and **“peace with God”** is a Person bringing together or reconciling two warring parties insofar as **“But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace...that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby”** Ephesians 2:13-14, 16.

That **“peace with God”** is a *Person* bringing together, making at one or reconciling two warring parties follows from the designation that the Lord gives the Lord Jesus Christ through Isaiah. Today’s believer should keep in mind the attack on the Deity of the Lord Jesus Christ to which Isaiah testifies via the modern versions from **“...many, which corrupt the word of God...”** 2 Corinthians 2:17. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *The 1611 Holy Bible versus Christmas Cut-Ups* and this extract p 2.

**“For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace”** Isaiah 9:6

Modern texts cut out each **“The”** for the sake of New Age inclusiveness. Today’s believer should note John’s admonition.

**“And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life”** 1 John 5:20. See:

[www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/version-comparison.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/version-comparison.php) *God’s Judgment, Grace and Mercy* p 56 on Isaiah 9:6:

The Lord Jesus Christ is **“The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace”** according to all Editions of the AV1611 since 1611, noting that each of the **“The’s”** is capitalised. Wycliffe lacks the **“The’s”** but the Bibles of the 16<sup>th</sup> century English Reformation, Coverdale, Bishops’, Geneva, all contain them. Challoner’s 1745 Revision of the Douay-Rheims alters **“The mighty God”** to **“God the Mighty”** and initiates the modern trend, as found in the RV, NIV, TNIV, NKJV, JB, NWT etc. to omit the **“The’s”** entirely, low-rating the Lord Jesus Christ and allowing for a New Age panoply of **“mighty Gods,”** including Allah for the Moslems (Mohammedans), ‘Mary’ (a mighty Goddess) for the Papists and Krishna, Kali, Shiva etc. for the Hindus, with the Lord Jesus Christ simply being ‘Mighty God’ for the Christians.

The Lord Jesus Christ is, however, **“The mighty God”** because **“He doeth great things; marvelous and unsearchable; marvellous things without number:”** Job 5:9 and He is **“the LORD God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things”** Psalm 72:14, He is **“The everlasting Father”** because He is **“the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth,”** and He **“fainteth not, neither is weary...there is no searching of his understanding”** Isaiah 40:28 and **“In him was life; and the life was the light of men”** John 1:4. Note also John 14:9, **“he that hath seen me hath seen the Father.”** He is **“The Prince of Peace”** for the reasons given in Isaiah 9:7 [**“Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this”**]. Note the comments above about the Lord’s absolute, global and universal rule with respect to Isaiah 2:1-4, Daniel 2:34, 35, Colossians 1:16, Revelation 11:15. The threefold title **“The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace”** can also be a reference to the God-head, 1 John 5:7, **“the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost.”**

Note Paul’s urgency with respect to this ministry of reconciliation *and its outcome* that encapsulates today’s believer’s ministry that Romans 5:11 expresses **“And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.”**

**“...God...hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ’s stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him”** 2 Corinthians 5:18-21.

5. Romans 5:12-19. Paul here sets out and contrasts in considerable detail the respective outcomes of Adam's sin and the righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ as he expresses in Romans 5:15, 18 **"But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many...Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life."**

Paul admirably summarises to the Corinthians condemnation and death via Adam's offence versus **"by the righteousness of one...justification of life"** Romans 5:18 where otherwise no such justification for or imputed righteousness to the believer can exist **"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus"** Romans 3:23-24. Paul's statement to the Corinthians brings into sharp focus the difference between Adam and Christ that Romans 5:12-19 show and the distinct delineation between being in one or other wherein is **"every soul of man"** Romans 2:9.

**"For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive"** 1 Corinthians 15:21-22.

6. Romans 5:20-21. Paul concludes this chapter by pointing out that, with respect to the law bringing sin up sharper but God's grace overpowering it, **"Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound"** Romans 5:20 and indeed usurped sin where **"sin hath reigned unto death"** Romans 5:21 and **"death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression..."** Romans 5:14.

Therefore **"That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord"** Romans 5:21 with a vital promise for today's believer insofar as, noting points 1 and 2 with respect to hope **"That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life"** Titus 3:7.

In sum, picking up on Titus 3:7 **"That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life"** this atonement chapter encapsulated in Romans 5:11 **"And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement"** attention is drawn to the attached studies **AV1611 Authority - Absolute** and **"The book of the LORD"** Isaiah 34:16 and these extracts respectively:

The AV1611 is both **"the book of the purchase"** Jeremiah 32:12 and of **"the purchased possession"** as Paul explains with respect to the Lord Jesus Christ **"In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory"** Ephesians 1:13-14.

The Lord's one Book, **"the book of the LORD"** is...**"the book of the living"** Psalm 69:28 i.e. **"the book of life"** Philippians 4:3, Revelation 3:5, 17:8, 20:12, 15, 22:19, **"the book of life of the Lamb"** Revelation 13:8, **"the Lamb's book of life"** Revelation 21:27

**"The book of the LORD"** Isaiah 34:16 **"The book of the purchase"** Jeremiah 32:12 is the ledger of the redeemed and the reconciled made righteous, **"the book of life"** as Paul states of his co-workers and in turn of today's believers all by definition with entries in the ledger. **"And I intreat thee also, true yokefellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellowlabourers, whose names are in the book of life"** Philippians 4:3.

That puts a solemn responsibility on today's believer to urge for others to be entered into the ledger, see remarks on point 3 and 2 Corinthians 6:1-2 "**We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain. (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)**" as John shows.

**"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire"** Revelation 20:15.

## Table – Romans 6:1-23

- 1 *What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?*
- 2 *God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?*
- 3 *Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?*
- 4 *Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.*
- 5 *For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:*
- 6 *Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.*
- 7 *For he that is dead is freed from sin.*
- 8 *Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:*
- 9 *Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.*
- 10 *For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.*
- 11 *Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.*
- 12 *Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.*
- 13 *Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.*
- 14 *For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.*
- 15 *What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.*
- 16 *Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?*
- 17 *But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.*
- 18 *Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.*
- 19 *I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.*
- 20 *For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.*
- 21 *What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.*
- 22 *But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.*



## Table – Romans 6:1-23, Continued

- 23 *For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 6:1-23

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Six* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1492-1494 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) Romans 6 Parts 1, 2 for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 6:1-2. Paul here in declaring "...*Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid...*" Romans 6:1-2 reiterates the rebuke of Romans 3:8 "*And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.*" Note this part of the response from Romans 3:1-31, point 3 on Romans 3:5-8 that applies equally to Romans 6:1-2.

Evil is never a means of good because Isaiah states "*Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*" Isaiah 5:20 e.g. Catholics, sodomites and feminazis. See attached studies **"The Cry of Sodom" – Genesis 18:20**, **Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom, The 1611 Holy Bible versus sodomite Peter J. Gomes** and **AV1611 Advanced Revelations and Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 and modern feminism or feminazism**.

As James states "*Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh*" James 3:11-12.

Today's believer should therefore understand and apply Romans 12:9 "*Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.*"

However, Paul gives a further reason for the believer not to "*continue in sin*" Romans 6:1 because he asks rhetorically "*...How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?*" Romans 6:2. "*dead to sin*" is an attribute of salvation that Paul develops further. See below.

For now, note that the answer to Paul's question in Romans 6:2 is as he himself wrote as Peter expressed it and as it applies to today's believer "*That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God*" 1 Peter 4:2 in Galatians 2:20 "*I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*" See remarks under Romans 4:1-25, point 3 on Romans 4:9-16.

2. Romans 6:3-5. Paul here remarks upon *spiritual* baptism at conversion as the means by which the believer is now "*dead to sin*" Romans 6:2 but he also partakes of a *spiritual* resurrection, as Paul states effectively summing up this passage in Romans 6:4 "*Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life*" this "*newness of life*" being "*...the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God...*" Galatians 2:20 "*no longer ...in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God*" 1 Peter 4:2 because as Paul says of the believer "*Therefore any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new*" 2 Corinthians 5:17. The believer thereby is *no more forced* to "*...live any longer therein*" in sin Romans 6:2 or walk therein but *free* "*...in Christ...a new creature*" to live and walk day-to-day as Paul urges the Colossians and today's believer.

"*As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him*" Colossians 2:6.

3. Romans 6:6-14. Spiritual baptism of the believer into Christ **“buried with him by baptism into death”** Romans 6:4 was a death and burial or passing away of **“old things”** followed by a resurrection of **“in Christ...a new creature”** to make way for **“all things...become new”** 2 Corinthians 5:17 according to **“newness of life...in the likeness of his resurrection”** Romans 6:4-5.

Paul now reveals that for the believer in Christ *passing away* of **“old things”** is also a crucifixion in **“...that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin”** Romans 6:6 so that the believer’s pre-conversion individual has been vaulted to the flesh i.e. **“the body of sin”** where together, though crucified in effect **“destroyed,”** they conspire to entice the believer away from **“Walk in the Spirit”** and regress to **“fulfil the lust of the flesh...the works of the flesh”** Galatians 5:16, 19 i.e. **“serve sin”** Romans 6:6.

However, Paul reminds the believer that **“..he that is dead is freed from sin”** Romans 6:7 i.e. dead folk are no longer subject to sin and temptation to sin as even the Lord Jesus Christ **“...was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin”** Hebrews 4:15 as Peter then states, equating suffering with death in the context **“For Christ also hath once suffered for sins...being put to death in the flesh...”** 1 Peter 3:18 and noting that this is armour against sin for the believer, **“Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin”** 1 Peter 4:1.

Paul therefore emphasises that **“if we be dead with Christ...we shall also live with him...death hath no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God”** Romans 6:8-10.

Paul is saying that except that the Lord **“was...yet without sin”** Hebrews 4:15 His death and resurrection *physically* is like the believer’s *spiritually* in that for the Lord Jesus Christ **“...death has no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he did unto sin once...”** Romans 6:9-10 and the Lord is *now* such that and where **“...God cannot be tempted with evil...”** James 1:13 the believer can say with the Lord Jesus Christ **“I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen...”** Revelation 1:18. That life is that **“...henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin”** Romans 6:6-7 such that as it is for the Lord Jesus Christ so it should be for the believer **“...in that he liveth, he liveth unto God”** Romans 6:10, in the believer’s case **“...to serve the living and true God; And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come”** 1 Thessalonians 1:9-10.

Yet though **“...God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus”** Ephesians 2:4-6, see Romans 5, point 1 on Romans 5:1-5, the believer, unlike the Lord Jesus Christ, is still vulnerable to **“...the sin which doth so easily beset us”** Hebrews 12:1.

Paul therefore makes a very *practical* statement that should be the outworking for the believer of his *spiritual* transformation described under point 2 above and with respect to Romans 6:6-10 above. **“Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof”** Romans 6:11-12. **“Sin...in your mortal body”** Romans 6:12 seeks to usurp **“...Christ in you, the hope of glory”** Colossians 1:27.

A good prayer for one another therefore to fulfil Romans 6:11-12 is as Paul prayed for the Thessalonians, noting that this prayer includes **“your mortal body”** Romans 6:12. **“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ”** 1 Thessalonians 5:23.



Paul is of course explicit about **“your mortal body”** Romans 6:12 where he states **“Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God...and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace”** Romans 6:13-14. Romans 6:13-14 is *in principle* what Ephesians 4:25-32 is *in practice*. Note Paul’s statement of what is now called *The Protestant Work Ethic* [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Protestant\\_work\\_ethic](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Protestant_work_ethic) in Ephesians 4:28 **“Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.”**

Romans 6:14 **“for ye are not under the law, but under grace”** applies for today’s believer insofar as Paul testifies individually and collectively for each and every believer today **“For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God”** Galatians 2:19 **“That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life”** Titus 3:7.

**“Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil. Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ’s sake hath forgiven you”** Ephesians 4:25-32.

4. Romans 6:15-18. Paul here in declaring **“...shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid”** Romans 6:15 reiterates the rebukes of Romans 6:1-2 **“...Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid...”** and Romans 3:8 **“And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.”**

Note this response from Romans 6:1-2 that applies equally to Romans 6:15.

Evil is never a means of good because Isaiah states **“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!”** Isaiah 5:20 e.g. Catholics, sodomites and feminazis. See attached studies **“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20**, Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom, **The 1611 Holy Bible versus sodomite Peter J. Gomes** and AV1611 Advanced Revelations and **Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 and modern feminism or feminazism**.

As James states **“Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh”** James 3:11-12.

Today’s believer should therefore understand and apply Romans 12:9 **“Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.”**

However, Paul gives a further reason for the believer not to **“continue in sin”** Romans 6:1 because he asks rhetorically **“...How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?”** Romans 6:2. **“dead to sin”** is an attribute of salvation that Paul develops further. See below.

For now, note that the answer to Paul’s question in Romans 6:2 is as he himself wrote as Peter expressed it and as it applies to today’s believer **“That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God”** 1 Peter 4:2 in Galatians 2:20 **“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.”** See remarks under Romans 4:1-25, point 3 on Romans 4:9-16.

Paul now takes his rebuke yet further with respect to Romans 6:13-14 **“Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God...and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace”** and Ephesians 4:25-32 in that he declares **“...that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you”** Romans 6:16-17. It is clear therefore, especially from Romans 6:17 with respect to **“...that form of doctrine which was delivered to you”** that countering the potential denigration of believers that Paul expresses in Romans 6:15 and *in practice* applying Romans 6:18 **“Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness”** is to follow Paul’s exhortations to the Thessalonians and to Timothy, both applicable to today’s believer.

**“Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle”** 2 Thessalonians 2:15.

**“Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus”** 2 Timothy 1:13.

5. **Romans 6:19-23.** Paul in Romans 6:19-20 repeats the rebukes of Romans 6:1-2, 15-16, see remarks under points 1, 4, Romans 6:1-2, 15-18 but here Paul contrasts *fruit*, the fruit of **“when ye were the servants of sin...for the end of those things is death”** Romans 6:21 those fruit-bearers being **“Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever”** Jude 13 **“For the wages of sin is death...”** Romans 6:23 with **“...your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life”** Romans 6:22 because to those **“...become servants to God...”** Romans 6:22 **“...the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord”** Romans 6:23.

**“...your fruit unto holiness”** is certainly that of **“...the spirit of holiness...”** Romans 1:4 because **“...the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ’s have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts”** Galatians 5:22-24.. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *The Fruit of the Spirit.*

Paul’s practical statement **“Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof”** Romans 6:11-12 really sums up Romans 6, looking forward to the bringing forth of **“your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life”** Romans 6:22 **“the fruit of the Spirit”** Galatians 5:22 as the Lord Himself said to His disciples and prayed for with respect to the fruit of those who **“obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you”** Romans 6:17 as John later affirmed with respect to the fruit of obedience personified.

**“Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain...”** John 15:16.

**“Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word”** John 17:20.

**“And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever”** 1 John 2:17.

## Table – Romans 7:1-25

- 1 *Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?*
- 2 *For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.*
- 3 *So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.*
- 4 *Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.*
- 5 *For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.*
- 6 *But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.*
- 7 *What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.*
- 8 *But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.*
- 9 *For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.*
- 10 *And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.*
- 11 *For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.*
- 12 *Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.*
- 13 *Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.*
- 14 *For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.*
- 15 *For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.*
- 16 *If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.*
- 17 *Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.*
- 18 *For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.*
- 19 *For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.*
- 20 *Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.*
- 21 *I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.*
- 22 *For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:*
- 23 *But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.*

## Table – Romans 7:1-25, Continued

- 24 *O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?*
- 25 *I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 7:1-25

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Seven* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1494-1495 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) Romans 7 Parts 1, 2 for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 7:1-4. See Romans 6:1-23, point 3 on Romans 6:6-14. Paul here expands on Romans 6:7 **“For he that is dead is freed from sin”** and related verses including Galatians 2:19 **“For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God”** by allusion to a woman permanently separated or divorced from her husband by his death, the woman's position analogous to the believer and the law as Paul states in Romans 6:14 **“For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.”**

The woman is no longer subject to her ex by his death but is eligible for re-marriage and the believer is no longer subject to *his* ex the law, indeed the *curse* of the law **“For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them”** Galatians 3:10 by *his* death with that of the Lord Jesus Christ and is *now* eligible **“...that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life: For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection”** Romans 6:4-5.

That is what Paul, alluding again to **“...your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life”** Romans 6:22, Romans 6:1-23, point 5, Romans 6:19-23, states with respect to the woman and the believer concerning **“former things...passed away”** Revelation 21:4 in Romans 7:2, 4 **“For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband...Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.”**

As today's believer should always remember Paul summarises Romans 7:1-4 in Galatians 3:13-14 **“Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith”** in turn **“...that we should bring forth fruit unto God”** Romans 7:4 namely **“the fruit of the Spirit”** Galatians 5:22 as the Lord Himself said to His disciples and prayed for with respect to the fruit of those who **“obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you”** Romans 6:17.

2. Romans 7:5-6. Paul here again addresses **“...our old man...crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin...but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God”** Romans 6:6, 14 in that therefore **“the body of sin”** had to **“...be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin”** Romans 6:6 **“For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death”** Romans 7:5.

**“...our old man”** though **“crucified with him”** Romans 6:6 has nevertheless found temporary asylum **“...in the flesh...”** Romans 7:5 **“...the body of sin...”** Romans 6:6. He is cut loose from he that **“in Christ...is a new creature”** 2 Corinthians 5:17 **“...the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness”** Ephesians 4:24 because **“...ye are circumcised with**



the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ” Colossians 2:11 but “...our old man” doth still seek to “...work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death” Romans 7:5.

That is “...fruit...then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed...for the end of those things is death” Romans 6:21. See Romans 1, point 8 on Romans 1:18-32 and this extract.

Paul concludes this chapter by contrasting “the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith” Romans 1:17 with “...the wrath of God...revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness” Romans 1:18. Nowhere is this ungodliness more apparent than with “the sin of Sodom” Lamentations 4:6 and “...many, which corrupt the word of God...” 2 Corinthians 2:17 in order to cover up for the sodomite child molesters. See the attached study “**The Cry of Sodom**” – Genesis 18:20.

In sum, Paul states in Galatians 5:17 therefore and as he expands on in this chapter insofar as “...the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” Ephesians 4:24 is said by Paul “...he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit” 1 Corinthians 6:17 “**For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would**” Galatians 5:17.

Paul’s testimony with respect to the above, especially Galatians 5:17 follows but he does remind the believer of assured victory in Romans 7:6 “**But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter**” which he summarises and as today’s believer should remember in 2 Corinthians 3:5-6 “...our sufficiency is of God; Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.”

That is as the Lord Jesus Christ said and well expresses today’s believer’s ministry with respect to imparting the 1611 Holy Bible as “the book of the LORD” Isaiah 34:16 “the scripture of truth” Daniel 10:21 “the royal law” James 2:8 and “All scripture” that “is given by inspiration of God” 2 Timothy 3:16. “**It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life**” John 6:63.

3. Romans 7:7-20. Paul here sets forth his own battle, and indeed noting the plural that of any and every believer, with respect to Galatians 5:17 “**For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.**”

Paul insists “Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good” Romans 7:12 “but...the law had said, Thou shalt not covet” Romans 7:7. At this point “...our old man” in temporary asylum “...in the flesh...” Romans 7:5 “...the body of sin...” Romans 6:6 as of “...them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities...as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed...” 2 Peter 2:10, 12 is as the persecutors of apostate Israel “...the hands of spoilers that spoiled them...” Judges 2:14.

Contemptuous of “...the commandment, which was ordained to life...” Romans 7:10 according to Galatians 3:12 “...The man that doeth them shall live in them...” “...our old man” in temporary asylum “...in the flesh...” Romans 7:5 “...the body of sin...” Romans 6:6, Paul testifies implemented “...sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead...but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died...For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me” Romans 7:8-9, 11. Note that Paul lists together “...inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry” Colossians 3:5. Sin’s deception, as Paul testifies, can provoke all those idolatrous attitudes and “...by the commandment...” Romans 7:8, 11 an idolater is a dead man:

**“And Achan answered Joshua, and said, Indeed I have sinned against the LORD God of Israel, and thus and thus have I done: When I saw among the spoils a goodly Babylonish garment, and two hundred shekels of silver, and a wedge of gold of fifty shekels weight, then I coveted them, and took them; and, behold, they are hid in the earth in the midst of my tent, and the silver under it...And Joshua said, Why hast thou troubled us? the LORD shall trouble thee this day. And all Israel stoned him with stones, and burned them with fire, after they had stoned them with stones”** Joshua 7:20-21, 25.

Today’s believer is vulnerable to sin’s deception giving rise to covetousness as Paul testifies in Romans 7:7-11 and as he warns in 1 Corinthians 10:12 **“Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall”** and context. Though not resulting in physical death, as with Achan, Joshua 7:25, or pre-conversion spiritual death, as with Paul, Romans 7:10 **“And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death”** sin’s deception giving rise to covetousness jeopardises fellowship with God when a worldly decision is made through desire without consulting the Lord *or being willing to do His will* **“...in all things willing to live honestly”** Hebrews 13:18, as James warns **“...know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God”** James 4:4.

See this literally shining example [www.vauxhall.co.uk/vehicles/vauxhall-range/cars/new-as-tra/overview.html?&ppc=uk](http://www.vauxhall.co.uk/vehicles/vauxhall-range/cars/new-as-tra/overview.html?&ppc=uk) Astra Core+**[E]** PPC ENG 2012 08 Vauxhall GB Astra++**[E]** Exact for the enticement of the buyer without delay i.e. without consulting God and note James’ warning.



**“Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain...For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil”** James 5:13, 15-16.

Paul emphasises again - see Romans 7:12 above - that **“...sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful”** Romans 7:13 in that **“The law of the LORD...”** Psalm 19:7 is the standard that soundly rebukes all men as Hannah observed. **“Talk no more so exceeding proudly; let not arrogancy come out of your mouth: for the LORD is a God of knowledge, and by him actions are weighed”** 1 Samuel 2:3.

Paul therefore confesses, as would today’s believer, *noting the present tense throughout*, that though *outwardly* Paul was **“...touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless”** Philippians 3:6, *inwardly* **“...our old man”** in temporary asylum **“...in the flesh...”** Romans 7:5 **“...the body of sin...”** Romans 6:6, *persists*. **“...I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I...For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not”** Romans 7:14-15, 18 and context.

The way forward in Paul’s dilemma, for any believer at any time in history and up until the Second Advent, is as Paul says elsewhere. Only one Person can solve Paul’s dilemma or that of any believer.

**“For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure”** Philippians 2:13.

4. Romans 7:21-25. Paul here contrasts two laws

He delights in one as today's believer would, **"...the law of God after the inward man...the law of my mind"** Romans 7:22-23 he that **"in Christ...is a new creature"** 2 Corinthians 5:17 **"...the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness"** Ephesians 4:24 because **"...ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ"** Colossians 2:11.

He abhors the other as today's believer would, **"...another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members"** Romans 7:23. That is the bullying of **"...our old man"** in temporary asylum **"...in the flesh..."** Romans 7:5 **"...the body of sin..."** Romans 6:6. He is like Pharaoh *and like Pharaoh who would not let Israel go he wants to wrest back what God took from him* **"...with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ"** Colossians 2:11. **"And Pharaoh said, Who is the LORD, that I should obey his voice to let Israel go? I know not the LORD, neither will I let Israel go"** Exodus 5:2.

That is why Paul cries out concerning his Pharaoh of **"...the body of the sins of the flesh..."** Colossians 2:11. **"O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?"** Romans 7:24 and therefore the bullying of **"...our old man"** in temporary asylum **"...in the flesh..."** Romans 7:5 **"...the body of sin..."** Romans 6:6.

Paul gives answer **"I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord"** but is forced to end this chapter with the confession that he is still caught between the dilemma of **"...with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin"** Romans 7:25.

That is, Paul, as today's believer, is still hung up on Galatians 5:17 **"For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would"** and as indicated in desperate need of Philippians 2:13 **"For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure,"** a subject that he addresses in the next chapter.

In sum, considering Paul's dilemma of **"...with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin"** Romans 7:25 today's believer can take comfort in the current ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ, a subject that Paul alludes to in the next chapter and elsewhere.

**"Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us."**

**"Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them"** Hebrews 7:25.



## Table – Romans 8:1-39

- 1 *There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.*
- 2 *For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.*
- 3 *For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:*
- 4 *That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.*
- 5 *For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.*
- 6 *For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.*
- 7 *Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.*
- 8 *So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.*
- 9 *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*
- 10 *And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.*
- 11 *But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.*
- 12 *Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.*
- 13 *For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.*
- 14 *For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*
- 15 *For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.*
- 16 *The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:*
- 17 *And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.*
- 18 *For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.*
- 19 *For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.*
- 20 *For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope,*
- 21 *Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.*
- 22 *For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.*

## Table – Romans 8:1-39, Continued

- 23 *And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.*
- 24 *For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?*
- 25 *But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.*
- 26 *Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.*
- 27 *And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.*
- 28 *And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*
- 29 *For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.*
- 30 *Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*
- 31 *What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?*
- 32 *He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?*
- 33 *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.*
- 34 *Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
- 35 *Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?*
- 36 *As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.*
- 37 *Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.*
- 38 *For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,*
- 39 *Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 8:1-39

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Eight* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1495-1498 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 8 Parts 1, 2, 3](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%208%20Parts%201,%202,%203) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 8:1-8. Paul follows up his statement **"...who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin"** Romans 7:24-25 with his declaration that **"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit"** Romans 8:1.

Note first this extract from Romans 7:1-25, point 2 on Romans 7:5-6. **"...our old man"** though **"crucified with him"** Romans 6:6 has nevertheless found temporary asylum **"...in the flesh..."** Romans 7:5 **"...the body of sin..."** Romans 6:6. He is cut loose from he that **"in Christ...is a new creature"** 2 Corinthians 5:17 **"...the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness"** Ephesians 4:24 because **"...ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ"** Colossians 2:11 but **"...our old man"** doth still seek to **"...work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death"** Romans 7:5.

That is **"...fruit...then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed...for the end of those things is death"** Romans 6:21. See Romans 1, point 8 on Romans 1:18-32...

Paul recognises that he is still vulnerable as stated in Romans 7:1-25, point 3 on Romans 7:7-20 to **"...our old man"** in temporary asylum **"...in the flesh..."** Romans 7:5 **"...the body of sin..."** Romans 6:6 as of **"...them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities...as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed..."** 2 Peter 2:10, 12...as the persecutors of apostate Israel **"...the hands of spoilers that spoiled them..."** Judges 2:14.

However, Paul recognises further that since he is among **"...them which are in Christ Jesus..."** in that **"...in Christ, he is a new creature..."** he now has the facility in which today's believer can rejoice, to apply Romans 6:13 **"...yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God,"** which is to **"...walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit"** Romans 8:1.

Note that the condemnation of Romans 8:1 is not the eternal condemnation of John 5:24 but for example wrong speaking contrary to Titus 2:7-8 **"In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you"**. An example is the brother with a thriving literature ministry who went against the 1611 Holy Bible and lost his entire ministry because **"...God is no respecter of persons"** Acts 10:34. See the attached article [Yes, the King James Bible IS Perfect](#).

When Paul states **"For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death"** Romans 8:2 he is reiterating as two distinct laws the contrast between them being as it applies to him and today's believer i.e. all who have gratefully received **"the free gift...upon all men unto justification of life"** Romans 5:18 in Romans 6:23 **"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."**

That freedom is what helps encourage Paul in his ministry, as it should today's believer. **"...our sufficiency is of God; Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life"** 2 Corinthians 3:5-6.

When Paul states **“For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh”** Romans 8:3 he is in effect reiterating Romans 7:18 **“For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing; for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.”**

That is because **“...All flesh is grass, and all the goodness thereof is as the flower of the field: The grass withereth, the flower fadeth; because the spirit of the LORD bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass”** Isaiah 40:6-7. Only the Law-Giver fulfilled the law in Himself and for all who answer to Romans 7:18, the Law-Giver being He **“Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth... Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls”** 1 Peter 2:22, 24-25.

In that respect was **“...the righteousness of the law...fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit”** Romans 8:4 because regrettably some though now **“...his own sheep by name...”** Romans 10:3 in that **“...the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch”** Acts 11:26 are still **“...as sheep going astray”** 1 Peter 2:25 and **“...after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh...”** at their peril **“For to be carnally minded is death...”** Romans 8:5-6. See again the attached article [\*\*Yes, the King James Bible IS Perfect\*\*](#) for the individual **“...vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind”** Colossians 2:18 who pitted himself against the 1611 Holy Bible and put his otherwise strategic literature ministry decisively to death because **“...God is no respecter of persons”** Acts 10:34.

By contrast see the attached study **The Manuscript Dichotomy – Bro. Al Cuppett’s Vision Vindicated** with respect to him that is one among **“...they that are after the Spirit...”** whereby **“...to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** Romans 8:5-6 because as an excellent role model for today’s believer Bro. Cuppett is **“...in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God”** Philippians 1:28.

Paul’s warning in Romans 8:7-8 **“Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God”** well applies to each and every saved AV1611 critic **“...vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind”** Colossians 2:18 as this extract from Bro. Cuppett’s testimony shows and as today’s believer should carefully reflect upon.

*“For ever, O Lord thy word is settled in heaven”*. Psm 119:89 – KJV ONLY. So, if the bible you’re using doesn’t match what’s *“for ever settled”* in heaven, you have a Jesuitic counterfeit. Thus, the Holy Spirit is exponentially bound, and the resultant spiritual vacuum of holiness/heaven sent power has been filled by evil in our churches AND OUR LAND, since about 1970. Therefore, the New World Order has come in *“like a flood”*. Hence, the foreign troops! Get back to the KJV, the old blood washed hymns, discarding forever praise and worship, since you must wash by the *“water of the word”* WHICH IS THE KJV BIBLE-ONLY, *before entering into the holy throne room of God. LOOK—! Doing praise and worship with ANY sin in your heart is an abomination!* Praise and worship without pure repentance beforehand is an ignorant or perverted attempt to APPEASE God! THINK! David Wilkerson preached the precepts just above in the italicized print, in 1988, not me. *He also says the angels cast this kind of [UNCLEAN] praise back on the earth as judgment!!*

Wilkerson and Cuppett are right. *“He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination”* Proverbs 28:9 with Proverbs 29:18 above. Be encouraged, though:





2. Romans 8:9-10. Romans 8:9 **“But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his”** should be memorised because it defines the New Testament Christian as Paul explains to the Colossians, also with respect to Romans 8:10 **“And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness”** noting that the Lord Jesus Christ is **“...Jesus Christ the righteous”** 1 John 2:1. The following explanation where Paul is speaking of **“...Jesus Christ: Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him”** 1 Peter 3:21-22 leaves no room for doubt or uncertainty over what a New Testament Christian actually is, an immortal **“...soul and spirit...”** Hebrews 4:12 indwelt by **“...the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost...”** 1 John 5:7 for now encased in but severed from **“...the body of this death...”** Romans 7:24 though at the Lord’s Return **“...this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality”** 1 Corinthians 15:53.

**“For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power; In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross”** Colossians 2:9-14.

3. Romans 8:11-13. Where Paul states **“But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh”** Romans 8:11-12 he is stating that **“...The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit...The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven”** 1 Corinthians 15:45, 47 so that at the Lord’s Return **“...this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality”** 1 Corinthians 15:53.

Therefore as Paul states further to the Corinthians with the same application to today’s believer **“And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again”** 2 Corinthians 5:15.

For Romans 8:13 **“For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live”** see remarks under point 1 Romans 8:1-8 and this extract, which is equally applicable to Romans 8:13.

...regrettably some though now **“...his own sheep by name...”** Romans 10:3 in that **“...the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch”** Acts 11:26 are still **“...as sheep going astray”** 1 Peter 2:25 and **“...after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh...”** at their peril **“For to be carnally minded is death...”** Romans 8:5-6. See again the attached article **Yes, the King James Bible IS Perfect** for the individual **“...vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind”** Colossians 2:18 who pitted himself against the 1611 Holy Bible and put his otherwise strategic literature ministry decisively to death because **“...God is no respecter of persons”** Acts 10:34.

By contrast see the attached study **The Manuscript Dichotomy – Bro. Al Cuppett’s Vision Vindicated** with respect to him that is one among **“...they that are after the Spirit...”** whereby **“...to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** Romans 8:5-6 because as an excellent role model for today’s believer Bro. Cuppett is **“...in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God”** Philippians 1:28.

The mortification of **“through the Spirit...the deeds of the body”** Romans 8:13 is as in point 1 Romans 8:1-8 and this extract.



However, Paul recognises further that since he is among “...them which are in Christ Jesus...” in that “...in Christ, he is a new creature...” he now has the facility in which today’s believer can rejoice, to apply Romans 6:13 “...yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God,” which is to “...walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit” Romans 8:1.

The mortification of “through the Spirit...the deeds of the body” Romans 8:13 is also eschewing “...our old man” in temporary asylum “...in the flesh...” Romans 7:5 “...the body of sin...” Romans 6:6 as Paul sets forth for the Colossians and for today’s believer “Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry...put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds...Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness...And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him” Colossians 3:5, 8-9, 12-14, 17 and context.

4. Romans 8:14-17. Paul in Romans 8:14 “For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God” is referring to those “...not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you” Romans 8:9 as John and Paul himself describe them, Paul focussing on the witness of the Spirit within the believer to that believer as an *adopted* son of God. Paul effectively expresses Romans 8:15-17 “For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together” to the Galatians in what follows.

“But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name” John 1:12 that power being “...the power of an endless life” Hebrews 7:16 according to “...the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus...” Romans 8:2.

“...that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ” Galatians 4:5-7.

The expressions “...the sons of God” Romans 8:14 and “...the children of God” Romans 8:16 emphasise respectively the inestimable privileges for the Christian of “Jesus...bringing many sons unto glory...For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren” Hebrews 2:9-11 and “...God our Father...” Romans 1:7, 1 Corinthians 1:3, 2 Corinthians 1:2, Ephesians 1:2, Philippians 1:2, Colossians 1:2, 1 Thessalonians 1:1, 2 Thessalonians 1:1, 2, 1 Timothy 1:2, Philemon 3 especially for the Christian “For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus” Galatians 3:26.

The inheritance of Romans 8:17, which would match that of Galatians 4:7 is as Paul states in 2 Timothy 2:12 “If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us.” A steadfast testimony to the Lord Jesus Christ now means a millennial reign with Him when He comes back as Isaiah prophesies “Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment...And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever” Isaiah 32:1, not as it is now with a senior clergyman apologising to sodomites. See:

[www.theguardian.com/world/2016/jan/15/justin-welby-says-sorry-to-lgbti-community-for-hurt-caused-by-church](http://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/jan/15/justin-welby-says-sorry-to-lgbti-community-for-hurt-caused-by-church) and again the attached studies **“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20** and **Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom.**

**“A righteous man falling down before the wicked is as a troubled fountain, and a corrupt spring”** Proverbs 25:26.

**“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!”** Isaiah 5:20.

Many fundamentalists object to **“The Spirit itself”** Romans 8:16, 26 and likewise **“Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow”** 1 Peter 1:11.

See attached extract entitled **“The Spirit itself”** Romans 8:16, 26 from *The 1611 Holy Bible versus Lying satanic Jacob Prasch Prequel* pp 15-16, 45-48 [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php) showing that as Paul admonishes **“For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness”** 1 Corinthians 3:19.

5. **Romans 8:18-25, 29-30.** When Paul refers to **“...the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God”** Romans 8:18-19 he is saying in effect **“Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled”** insofar as the Lord said **“As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear”** Matthew 5:6, 13:40-43.

Right now **“...the creature was made subject to vanity...”** Romans 8:20 in that as King David states **“Behold, thou hast made my days as an handbreadth; and mine age is as nothing before thee: verily every man at his best state is altogether vanity. Selah”** Psalm 39:5 and as Moses states **“The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away”** Psalm 90:10.

When the Lord comes back then **“...by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope...the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God”** Romans 8:20-21 in that as the Lord said through Isaiah with reference to the *Second Advent* **“The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound...To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified”** Isaiah 61:1, 3.

Then shall come to pass what the Lord said through Isaiah and Malachi about Zion and **“...my king upon my holy hill of Zion”** Psalm 2:6 **“And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising”** Isaiah 60:3 **“For from the rising of the sun even unto the going down of the same my name shall be great among the Gentiles; and in every place incense shall be offered unto my name, and a pure offering: for my name shall be great among the heathen, saith the LORD of hosts”** Malachi 1:11.

Paul then refocuses upon today’s believer who does personally **“...know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only they...even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body”** Romans 8:22-23. This is key, noting remarks under points 2, 3 on Romans 8:9-10, 11-13 and 1 Corinthians 15:45, 47, 53 and Romans 8:24-25 **“For we are saved by hope...if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it”** as Paul explains for today’s believer with respect

to “Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ” Titus 2:13 in Philippians 3:20-21 “For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself” and as John emphasises as a great encouragement to today’s believer “Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is” 1 John 3:2.

That is what is meant by Paul’s subsequent statements “For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called; and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified” Romans 8:29-30, that being as Peter states “...an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you” 1 Peter 1.4.

6. Romans 8:26-27, 34. See attached extract entitled “The Spirit itself” Romans 8:16, 26. Paul focuses on the intercessory ministry of the Spirit of God and the Son of God within the believer “...the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered...And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God...It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us” Romans 8:26-27, 34. Paul sums up that ministry as follows.

“Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them” Hebrews 7:25.

That ministry is powerful. It can raise the dead. “When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled...Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always...And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go” John 11:33, 41-44.

Today’s believer can be thankful for his Intercessor Who truthfully testified “And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him” John 8:29.

7. Romans 8:28, 31-39. These scriptures are associated in that it is “...them that love God...” in Romans 8:28 “And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose” it is “them that love God...called according to his purpose” that is “...the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” Ephesians 4:24, see point 1 on Romans 8:1-8 and “...whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son...” Romans 8:29. See point 5 on Romans 8:18-25, 29-30.

In Romans 8:31-39 it is “...him that loved us” Romans 8:37 in that “He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all...” Romans 8:32 and therefore “...in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ’s sake” 2 Corinthians 12:10 and indeed in all challenges that Paul sets forth in Romans 8:31-39 “...It is God that justifieth. It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us” Romans 8:33-34 so that though “...we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter...in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us” Romans 8:36-37 because today’s believer is or should be like “...Jesus Christ...the faithful witness...” Revelation 1:5 as Paul exhorts each of today’s believers in 2 Corinthians 2:14 “Now

thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.”

Paul gives today’s believer eternal security because he identifies no creature or thing that “...shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” Romans 8:39. He does so because he knew these statements from the Lord Jesus Christ with respect “...to them that love God...” Romans 8:28 “...to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting” 1 Timothy 1:16.

“The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand...the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God...And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me” John 3:35, 16:27, 17:22-23. That is eternal security according to Romans 8:31-39 and while today’s believer should always strive to follow “...the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you” 1 Thessalonians 5:18, he should be able to rest in and minister in that eternal security, challenging though it is, as Paul testifies in Acts 20:24 “But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.”

Note in the light of Paul’s disclosures above that with respect to “...neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” Romans 8:38:

“Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure” Isaiah 46:9-10.

“Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD” Jeremiah 23:24.

“...Jesus Christ...is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him” 1 Peter 3:21-22.

“I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death” Revelation 1:18.

“And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever” Revelation 5:13.

One believer who to this writer exemplified Acts 20:24 and Romans 8:28 was Bro. Cyril Barton. See the attached study **“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends” John 15:13** on Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC 1921-1944.

In closing on this segment of the study, note that many fundamentalists object to the wording of the AV1611 in Romans 8:28.

See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) ‘O Biblios’ – The Book p 122 and this extract with an added reference.

The next “*omission*” is **Romans 8:28**, where “**all things work together for good**” has been altered to “in all things God works for the good” or similar by the NIV, JB, NJB, NWT, Ne, L. T, Tr, A are absent on this occasion, demonstrating once again that scholars are not unanimous in their attacks on the AV1611.

Given Psalm 72:18 and Proverbs 10:22, no Christian would ever need reassurance that God would neglect to do GOOD. The test of faith is whether ALL THINGS can be received as the agents for good. Nevertheless, in the Bible “**all things**” are used to encourage rejoicing IN THE LORD Habakkuk 3:17, 18; Philippians 4:4, to strengthen faith Psalm 112:7, 1 Peter 1:6, 7, to develop character Job 23:10, to deepen intimacy with the Lord Job 42:5, 6 and to reveal more of one’s real self Job 42:5, 6 again, 2 Chronicles 32:24-26, 31 [**“Howbeit in the business of the ambassadors of the princes of Babylon, who sent unto him to enquire of the wonder that was done in the land, God left him, to try him, that he might know all that was in his heart”** 2 Chronicles 32:31]. Note that in the last reference, God is not ‘working’ at all. He simply lets events take their course - for Hezekiah’s admonition. See Isaiah 39:5-8.

Furthermore, the NIV reading implies that God may not always be able to control circumstances but must work in spite of them. This, of course is not so, Isaiah 10:5-15.

With respect to the above extract and the Lord’s dealing with AV1611 critics note that as usual **“He leadeth counsellors away spoiled, and maketh the judges fools”** Job 12:17.

Paul’s emphasis in Romans 8 on **“the adoption of sons”** Galatians 4:5 with 8:14-17, **“bringing many sons unto glory”** Hebrews 2:10 and today’s believer eternal security whereby **“...this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality”** 1 Corinthians 15:53 with Romans 8:24-25, 29-39 focuses on Paul’s exhortation to the Thessalonians with its *practical* outcome to **“Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus”** 2 Timothy 1:13.

**“But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle”** 2 Thessalonians 2:13-15.



## Table – Romans 9:1-33

- 1 *I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost,*
- 2 *That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.*
- 3 *For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:*
- 4 *Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises;*
- 5 *Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.*
- 6 *Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:*
- 7 *Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.*
- 8 *That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.*
- 9 *For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son.*
- 10 *And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac;*
- 11 *(For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)*
- 12 *It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.*
- 13 *As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.*
- 14 *What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.*
- 15 *For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.*
- 16 *So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.*
- 17 *For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.*
- 18 *Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.*
- 19 *Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?*
- 20 *Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?*
- 21 *Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?*



## Table – Romans 9:1-33, Continued

- 22 *What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:*
- 23 *And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,*
- 24 *Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?*
- 25 *As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved.*
- 26 *And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God.*
- 27 *Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved:*
- 28 *For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.*
- 29 *And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha.*
- 30 *What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.*
- 31 *But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.*
- 32 *Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;*
- 33 *As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 9:1-33

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Nine* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1499-1500 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *Romans 9 Parts 1, 2* and *Israel – Past, Present, Future* for additional thoughts. Note that Romans 9-11 focus on the position of the Jew and the nation of Israel in the Church Age and in particular the Jewish believer in the Church Age and the End Times according to Isaiah 8:17 **“And I will wait upon the LORD, that hideth his face from the house of Jacob, and I will look for him.”**

1. Romans 9:1-5. Paul here enlarges upon his remarks to Jewish readers as God's special people **“For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth”** Deuteronomy 7:6 in Romans 2:17-18 **“Behold, thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God, And knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law”** and context to Romans 2:25 and Romans 3:1-2 **“What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision? Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.”**

Paul brings his Jewish readers down with a bump earlier in the Book of Romans with this stinging admonition. **“Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God? For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written”** Romans 2:23-24. He expands on that admonition and also the question of **“What advantage then hath the Jew?”** Romans 3:1 in Romans 9-11.

However, Paul first in Romans 9:1-5 sets forth “...the truth in Christ...That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart...for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh” Romans 9:1-3.

These, Paul says, “...are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises; Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever, Amen” Romans 8:4-5 because:

“...Thus saith the LORD, Israel is my son, even my firstborn” Exodus 4:22.

“And he said, Behold, I make a covenant: before all thy people I will do marvels, such as have not been done in all the earth, nor in any nation: and all the people among which thou art shall see the work of the LORD: for it is a terrible thing that I will do with thee” Exodus 34:10.

“...a cloud covered the tent of the congregation, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle” Exodus 40:34.

“I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth...Out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remaineth of the city” Numbers 24:17, 19 that is “...that Wicked...whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming” 2 Thessalonians 2:8, “...that Wicked...” to whom “...the dragon gave him his power, and his seat...that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth” Revelation 13:2, 17:18, namely Rome. See the Ruckman Reference Bible pp 1658-1659, 1662-1663.

“There failed not ought of any good thing which the LORD had spoken unto the house of Israel; all came to pass” Joshua 21:45.

“Blessed be the LORD, that hath given rest unto his people Israel, according to all that he promised: there hath not failed one word of all his good promise, which he promised by the hand of Moses his servant” 1 Kings 8:56.

“This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us” Acts 7:38.

“Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary...Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God” Hebrews 9:1, 6.

That is why Paul experiences “...great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart” Romans 9:2 because God also says of Israel “Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it” Acts 7:53 “You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities” Amos 3:2.

That is a despondency that today’s believer experiences with respect to friends and even family where it is so “...that they are the enemies of the Christ of Christ; Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things” Philippians 3:18-19.

2. Romans 9:6-13. Paul summarises Romans 9:6-9 with the statements **“Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel...For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son”** Romans 9:6, 9 that word being fulfilled *both physically and spiritually* as Paul states in Hebrews 11:11-12 **“Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable”** as Paul explains in Galatians 4:28 **“Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.”**

Today’s believer should therefore be encouraged by Isaiah 55:11 **“So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.”**

In addition, God *discriminates* and *has favourites* and even *hates some individuals* “*(...that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)...The elder shall serve the younger. As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated”* Romans 9:11-13.

Note that like the Lord’s word, Isaiah 55:11, the Lord’s purposes will stand. **“For the LORD of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?”** Isaiah 14:27.

Concerning **“As it is written...Esau have I hated”** Romans 9:13 note Genesis 26:34-35 **“And Esau was forty years old when he took to wife Judith the daughter of Beeri the Hittite, and Bashemath the daughter of Elon the Hittite: Which were a grief of mind unto Isaac and to Rebekah”** and in turn Ezekiel 13:22-23 **“Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life: Therefore ye shall see no more vanity, nor divine divinations: for I will deliver my people out of your hand: and ye shall know that I am the LORD”** with God’s End Times judgement upon Esau i.e. Moslems, see the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1184-1185.

**“The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground? Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, saith the LORD...And the house of Jacob shall be a fire, and the house of Joseph a flame, and the house of Esau for stubble, and they shall kindle in them, and devour them; and there shall not be any remaining of the house of Esau; for the LORD hath spoken it”** Obadiah 3-4, 18.

Today’s believer should keep the above in mind as and when **“...a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries”** 1 Corinthians 16:9 because he can spiritually apply Zechariah 2:8 **“For thus saith the LORD of hosts; After the glory hath he sent me unto the nations which spoiled you: for he that toucheth you toucheth the apple of his eye.”**

3. Romans 9:14-18. Paul then asks and gives answer **“Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid...Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth”** Romans 9:14, 18 in keeping with Exodus 34:5-7 describing both God’s mercy and judgement.

**“And the LORD descended in the cloud, and stood with him there, and proclaimed the name of the LORD. And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children’s children, unto the third and to the fourth generation”** whereby **“...the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth”** Romans 9:17, which was known in other lands and the Lord thereby feared **“For we have heard how the LORD dried up the water of the Red sea for you, when ye came out of Egypt...And as soon as we had heard these things, our hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage in any man, because of you: for the LORD your God, he is God in heaven above, and in earth beneath”** Joshua 2:10-11.

Pharaoh however had iniquity visited upon him because he feared not God.

**“And Pharaoh said, Who is the LORD, that I should obey his voice to let Israel go? I know not the LORD, neither will I let Israel go...And he hardened Pharaoh’s heart, that he hearkened not unto them; as the LORD had said”** Exodus 5:2, 7:13 with Exodus 10:20, 27.

Pharaoh’s fate, then, is as follows. **“Pharaoh’s chariots and his host hath he cast into the sea: his chosen captains also are drowned in the Red sea. The depths have covered them: they sank into the bottom as a stone”** Exodus 15:4-5.

King Solomon’s warning should therefore be kept in mind. **“But it shall not be well with the wicked, neither shall he prolong his days, which are as a shadow; because he feareth not before God”** Ecclesiastes 8:13.

4. Romans 9:19-24. Paul here depicts an individual such as those of **“...a stubborn and rebellious generation; a generation that set not their heart aright, and whose spirit was not stedfast with God”** Deuteronomy 21:18 and who insists **“...Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?”** Romans 9:19 because he becomes fatalistic as King Solomon did in Ecclesiastes 9:2 **“All things come alike to all: there is one event to the righteous, and to the wicked; to the good and to the clean, and to the unclean; to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not: as is the good, so is the sinner; and he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath”** **“...and will not behold the majesty of the LORD”** Isaiah 26:10.

The last stage is that of Psalm 14:1 **“The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good.”**

That individual is like the social workers who abducted the two adopted sons from their Christian parents. See:

[www.christianconcern.com/our-concerns/family/court-of-appeal-boys-removal-from-christian-parents-to-be-scrutinised](http://www.christianconcern.com/our-concerns/family/court-of-appeal-boys-removal-from-christian-parents-to-be-scrutinised).

Thankfully, the Court of Appeal has thus far blocked the abduction. It is to be hoped and prayed that the Lord prevails according to 1 Corinthians 15:57 **“But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.”**

Paul however gives the Biblical way forward in Romans 9:21 **“Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?”**

No-one *has* to be one of “...*the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*” Romans 9:22 like Pharaoh. See point 3 above on Romans 9:14-18.

An individual in either “*the new testament*” or “*the old testament*” 2 Corinthians 3:6, 14 can be among “...*the vessels of mercy...prepared unto glory...Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles...*” Romans 9:23-24 simply by means of the prayer of King David, *with a view to moving on for the sake of effective ministry*, noting of course that Psalm 51:11 “*Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me*” should be inserted for the non-Church Age believer, whereas for the Church Age believer Paul testifies “*Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts*” 2 Corinthians 1:21-22.

Note that King David’s prayer as today’s believer would apply it is consistent with 1 Thessalonians 5:23 “*And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ*” and 1 John 1:9 “*If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*”

“*Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me...Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with thy free spirit. Then will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee*” Psalm 51:9-10, 12-13.

5. Romans 9:25-33. Paul here extends Romans 9:24 by means of Old Testament passages “*As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God...That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith*” Romans 9:25-26, 30 because like the Samaritans they declared “*Now we believe...for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world*” John 4:42.

That is the outcome of an effective witness. Just how effective such a witness may be is shown by the following extract from [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *The KJB Story 1611-2011 Abridged* pp 20-21.

...it was not for the purpose of empire that God made England supreme and Britain Great. God made Britain great so that “*all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of God*” according to Isaiah 52:10.

We close with a compelling illustration of how this worked out in the days of the British Empire, from the lives of some of those “*battle-scarred storm troopers*” that Dr Ruckman described.

Dr William Grady<sup>1</sup> relates how Charles Darwin visited the islands of Tierra del Fuego at the southern end of South America in 1833. The natives were so savage that Darwin was convinced that he had found his so-called ‘missing link’ between animals and humans.

In about 1870, Darwin visited Tierra del Fuego again.

This time, he was astounded to discover that many natives had become Christians through the work of the South American Missionary Society, or SAMS<sup>2</sup>.

The society was founded in 1844 by Captain Allen Gardiner of the Royal Navy. Gardiner and six of his missionary companions died in the society’s service in



1851 in Patagonia. They had endured several months of sickness, starvation and extreme cold, reaching 20 degrees below zero.

Captain Gardiner wrote the last lines in his diary on September 6<sup>th</sup> 1851<sup>3</sup>. He said this: *“By God’s Grace this blessed group was able to sing praises to Christ for eternity. I am not hungry or thirsty in spite of 5 days without eating; Wonderful Grace and Love to me, a sinner...”*

As Paul said in Philippians 4:4 **“Rejoice in the Lord always [all the way]: and again I say, Rejoice.”** Captain Gardiner and his companions set the standard for that verse.



Captain Gardiner died near the upturned boat in September 1851

Thanks to his 1870 visit to Tierra del Fuego, Charles Darwin was so impressed by the work of SAMS that he became an Honorary Member and gave an annual subscription to the society for the rest of his life.

It needs only to be added that the missionary workers of SAMS ministered to the tribes of Patagonia and Tierra del Fuego through one Book, the Book that John Wesley and Charles Haddon Spurgeon called *“the Book of God.”*

Paul laments however, with respect to **“my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh”** Romans 9:3 that **“Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved...Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrha”** Romans 9:27, 29 **“...as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah”** Romans 13:19.

Note in passing that God will do so again **“For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth”** Romans 9:28 i.e. for the whole world because **“...the whole world lieth in wickedness”** 1 John 5:19. See attached study **“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20** and note Isaiah 13:11 **“And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible.”**

Israel’s problem, Paul states in the conclusion to this chapter, is that **“...Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness...Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone”** Romans 9:31-32.



This happened because **“As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed”** Romans 9:33 and Israel disbelieved, her leaders being so ashamed of **“...the Christ, the Saviour of the world”** John 4:42 that they declared Him *to a Gentile* to be **“...that deceiver...”** Matthew 27:63.

Paul therefore does **“...judge righteous judgment”** John 7:24 and pronounces it for the time **“...when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power”** 2 Thessalonians 1:7-9.

Noting that the above passages on impending judgement apply to both unrepentant Gentiles as well as unrepentant Jews, Paul’s exhortation to the Colossians, even with respect to the believer to **“Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God”** 2 Timothy 1:8, should be followed with respect to the bringing forth of **“...Christ in you, the hope of glory: Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily”** Colossians 1:27-29.

## Table – Romans 10:1-21

- 1 *Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.*
- 2 *For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.*
- 3 *For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.*
- 4 *For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.*
- 5 *For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.*
- 6 *But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:)*
- 7 *Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.)*
- 8 *But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach;*
- 9 *That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.*
- 10 *For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.*
- 11 *For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.*
- 12 *For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.*
- 13 *For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.*
- 14 *How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?*
- 15 *And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!*
- 16 *But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report?*
- 17 *So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*
- 18 *But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.*
- 19 *But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.*
- 20 *But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.*
- 21 *But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 10:1-21

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Ten* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1500-1501 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/ Romans 10 and Israel – Past, Present, Future](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%2010%20and%20Israel%20-%20Past,%20Present,%20Future) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 10:1-4. Paul states in Romans 10:1 **“Brethren, my heart’s desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved”** what God Himself says of Israel **“...for why will ye die, O house of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye”** Ezekiel 18:31-32 and indeed to all men. **“Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else”** Isaiah 45:22 as Paul reiterates in that **“God our Saviour...will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth”** 1 Timothy 2:3-4.

That is why today’s believer as with **“...every one that is born of the Spirit”** John 3:8 should testify as the Lord Jesus Christ did **“...To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice”** John 18:37. Israel did not, as Paul testifies. **“For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. For they being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God”** Romans 10:2-3.

**“...a zeal of God...being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness...”** always ends with persecution of true believers and of any that are perceived as infidels as Paul himself testifies and as is true today because the persecutors’ mindset is **“I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High”** Isaiah 14:14 not **“...I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ”** Philippians 3:8.

**“For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews’ religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it: And profited in the Jews’ religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers”** Galatians 1:13-14.

**“For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men”** 1 Thessalonians 2:14-15.

See attached study **The KJB King James Bible, Britain and Islam** and this extract that concludes with a descriptor of those who **“have...submitted themselves unto the righteous of God”** because as Paul says **“For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth”** Romans 10:4 that is **“Christ...Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth”** 1 Peter 2:21-22.

...the true nature of Islam toward disbelievers [is] beat them into submission; **“...fight and slay the Pagans wherever ye find them, an seize them, beleaguer them, and lie in wait for them in every stratagem (of war)...”** Sura 9:5, Yusuf Ali’s translation.

That is the opposite of the KJB in 2 Timothy 2:24-26 [**“And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will”**] i.e. encourage them **“to...repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ”** Acts 20:21.

2. Romans 10:5-13. Paul here contrasts “...the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them” Romans 10:5 that is “Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I am the LORD” Leviticus 18:5 with “...the righteousness which is of faith...” Romans 10:6.

The contrast is sharp because “...the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:)” Romans 10:6 in that the Lord said “I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world” John 6:51.

The contrast is sharp because “...the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart.... Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.)” Romans 10:6-7 in that the Lord said “I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen...” Revelation 1:18.

Then “...the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise... The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach” Romans 10:6, 8 in that as Paul testifies and as today’s believer should “For Christ sent me... to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect” 1 Corinthians 1:17.

Romans 10:9-11 “That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed” that follow is the definitive New Testament statement on Church Age salvation though some exhortation may be necessary on Romans 10:11. “Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God” 2 Timothy 1:8.

Paul’s exhortation was effective. See attached study **Timothy the Faithful – “O man of God” 1 Timothy 6:11.**

Note that “the gospel of Christ” Romans 1:16 is *exclusive* as the Lord and Peter testify.

“Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me” John 14:6.

“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved” Acts 4:12.

However as Paul testifies “the gospel of Christ” Romans 1:16 *excludes no-one* “For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved” Romans 10:12-13.

Note that the Ethiopian’s testimony Acts 8:36-37 fully depicts Church Age salvation according to Romans 10:9-11. That is why Acts 8:37 has come under attack from “...many, which corrupt the word of God...” 2 Corinthians 2:17. See the attached study **Acts 8v37 - Why this SHOULD be in the Bible!**

What follows is today’s believer’s testimony for the Church Age with respect to “...Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh... declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead” Romans 1:3-4. Peter depicts that testimony well, even though beset with doubt and fear. Note that the Lord’s response was both immediate and effective.

**“But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?”** Matthew 14:30-31.

The Ethiopian’s testimony is as follows.

**“And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God”** Acts 8:36-37.

The Ethiopian thereby fulfilled Romans 10:13 **“For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved”** and that is why John wrote his Gospel. **“...these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name”** John 20:31.

Note in passing that the hyperdispensational heretics do not see Romans 10:13 as applicable to a prayer for salvation and neither would they see Matthew 14:30-31 as a depiction of that prayer and its immediate and effective answer. See Dr Ruckman’s commentary *The Book of Romans* pp 404-406 against that heresy and [www.timefortruth.co.uk/errors-of-hyperdispensationalism/Errors of Hyperdispensationalism](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/errors-of-hyperdispensationalism/Errors%20of%20Hyperdispensationalism).

Once again, therefore, note Paul’s exhortation to Timothy. **“Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God”** 2 Timothy 1:8.

3. **Romans 10:14-21.** Paul’s statement of Church Age salvation therefore prompts his questions in Romans 10:14-15 **“How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent?...”**

Paul’s answer is the commission that today’s believer has, *noting first that Paul did not willingly exclude the Jews from that commission.* Paul experienced firsthand Romans 10:16, 18-21 **“But they have not all obeyed the gospel...But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily...First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not...But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people”** with respect to Israel because **“...the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts”** Acts 13:50.

**“But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth”** Acts 13:45-47.

Israel’s problem here is as found in [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) ‘O Biblios’ – *The Book* p 248 as it is for Britain and this extract.

See also *Still No Revival?* [www.chick.com/reading/tracts/1069/1069\\_01.asp](http://www.chick.com/reading/tracts/1069/1069_01.asp) for an excellent overview of the effectiveness in the last 30 years of ***“the finest churches, with the strongest Bible teaching, the godliest members, the fullest prayer meetings, the most faithful and fruitful ministries and the greatest impact for good”*** who ***“use and commend the NIV etc and have done so for a long time”*** in the USA, the very nation where the NIV was translated and first published. The situation is much the same in the UK. See **General Introduction**.

I seriously doubt whether these “*finest churches*” have even arrested the decline. Rev M. J. Roberts, editor of *The Banner of Truth Magazine* and minister of Greyfriars Free Church in Inverness, would seem to agree. I quote from his address in the TBS *Quarterly Record*, No. 529, October to December 1994:

*“The Bible is a lost book in Britain today. It has little influence on national life any more...We have to admit that we are not seeing souls converted in great numbers. It does not matter where you go. Go to Wales, to Scotland, or to England here. Few are being converted in these days. Where are the days when the Bible was being blessed to the conversion of thousands and ten thousands?...The problem is here. This book is not being read so as to bring light to bear upon men’s lives. Therefore the tragedy is that men are not being converted to Christ. Could any curse in this life be greater? Could any judgment be more awful than this?”*

No.

Paul states **“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God”** Romans 10:17 but the Jews blocked their hearing e.g. **“...when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed...”** Acts 22:20 in that **“Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord”** Acts 7:57 as in principle do most Brits as Bro. Roberts has shown and they in turn like the Jews become **“...a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith”** Deuteronomy 32:20.

The sombre ending of Romans 10 and its reflection on today’s **“...very forward generation”** should not detract from the Lord’s assurances in Luke 15:7, 10 **“I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance...Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.”**

Note Jeremiah 32:17 therefore, Bro. Roberts’ understandable despondency notwithstanding, **“Ah Lord GOD! behold, thou hast made the heaven and the earth by thy great power and stretched out arm, and there is nothing too hard for thee.”** In spite of the most trying of times and entrenched opposition, or perhaps because of them, it may yet be seen what Paul and Barnabas saw.

**“And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region”** Acts 13:48-49.



## Table – Romans 11:1-36

- 1 *I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.*
- 2 *God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,*
- 3 *Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.*
- 4 *But what saith the answer of God unto him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.*
- 5 *Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.*
- 6 *And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.*
- 7 *What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded*
- 8 *(According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day.*
- 9 *And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompence unto them:*
- 10 *Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.*
- 11 *I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.*
- 12 *Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness?*
- 13 *For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office:*
- 14 *If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.*
- 15 *For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?*
- 16 *For if the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.*
- 17 *And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree;*
- 18 *Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.*
- 19 *Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.*
- 20 *Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:*

## Table – Romans 11:1-36, Continued

- 21 *For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.*
- 22 *Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.*
- 23 *And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.*
- 24 *For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?*
- 25 *For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.*
- 26 *And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:*
- 27 *For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.*
- 28 *As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes.*
- 29 *For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.*
- 30 *For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:*
- 31 *Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.*
- 32 *For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.*
- 33 *O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!*
- 34 *For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counsellor?*
- 35 *Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?*
- 36 *For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.*

## Notes on Table – Romans 11:1-36

See Dr Ruckman's commentary *The Book of Romans, Romans Chapter Eleven* and the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1501-1502 for detailed comment. See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans 11 Parts 1, 2 and Israel – Past, Present, Future](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/Romans%2011%20Parts%201,%202%20and%20Israel%20-%20Past,%20Present,%20Future) for additional thoughts.

1. Romans 11:1-6. Paul asks "**I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid...**" Romans 11:1. The answer is no "**God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew...**" Romans 11:2.

Psalm 147:19-20 show how God deals especially with Israel. Jeremiah 31:35-37, 33:19-21, 25-26 emphasise God's special relationship with the nation of Israel and its permanence.

***"He sheweth his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel. He hath not dealt so with any nation: and as for his judgments, they have not known them. Praise ye the LORD."***

*“Thus saith the LORD, which giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, which divideth the sea when the waves thereof roar; The LORD of hosts is his name: If those ordinances depart from before me, saith the LORD, then the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me for ever. Thus saith the LORD; If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done, saith the LORD.”*

*“And the word of the LORD came unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus saith the LORD; If ye can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; Then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne; and with the Levites the priests, my ministers.”*

*“Thus saith the LORD; If my covenant be not with day and night, and if I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth; Then will I cast away the seed of Jacob, and David my servant, so that I will not take any of his seed to be rulers over the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: for I will cause their captivity to return, and have mercy on them.”*

Note that the Church is *“the body of Christ”* 1 Corinthians 12:27 not *“the seed of Israel.”* That term is never applied to the Church anywhere in the New Testament. If Isaiah 53:10 is applied to the Church with respect to *“his seed,”* *“it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda”* Hebrews 7:14 but *“the seed of Israel”* must apply to *all* Israel such that *“all Israel shall be saved”* Romans 11:26. Note that Paul refers to *“all Israel”* as late as Acts 26:7 as *“our twelve tribes”* not only Judah, Paul himself coming from a different tribe, namely that *“...of the tribe of Benjamin”* Romans 11:1, *“of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin”* Philippians 3:5. Paul’s description of *“the seed of Israel”* or *“the stock of Israel”* is clearly separate from the Church.

God’s faithfulness to Israel is steadfast in spite of God declaring *“...the house of Israel...O rebellious house...”* Ezekiel 12:24-25, as Paul records in Romans 11:2-3 *“...Elias...maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying, Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.”*

God’s answer to Elijah, says Paul, is that *“...I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal”* Romans 11:4. This writer believes that it was those few that saved Israel from enemy invaders.

*“Then he numbered the young men of the princes of the provinces, and they were two hundred and thirty two: and after them he numbered all the people, even all the children of Israel, being seven thousand...And they pitched one over against the other seven days. And so it was, that in the seventh day the battle was joined: and the children of Israel slew of the Syrians an hundred thousand footmen in one day”* 1 Kings 20:15, 29.

Today’s believer should therefore always be ready to apply King Asa’s prayer, noting its outcome. *“And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, it is nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on thee, and in thy name we go against this multitude. O LORD, thou art our God; let not man prevail against thee. So the LORD smote the Ethiopians before Asa, and before Judah; and the Ethiopians fled.”*

For further encouragement in that respect see the attached study **The Martyrs’ Hymn – “We Rest On Thee.”**

Paul states further “Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work” Romans 11:5-6.

That is, for now, as Paul testifies according to his inclusion in “...a remnant according to the election of grace...no more of works” and exhorts today’s believer “For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh, I more...Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ...Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample” Philippians 3:3-4, 6-8, 17.

Paul emphasises the distinction between *grace* and *works*, “And if by grace, then is it no more of works...But if it be of works, then is it no more grace” Romans 11:6, because that distinction is central to salvation itself. “For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast” Ephesians 2:8-9.

2. Romans 11:7-11. Paul here describes the fate of those of Israel that turned from or even “...perverted the words of the living God, of the LORD of hosts our God” Jeremiah 23:36 to the point where “For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us” Isaiah 33:22 degenerated to “...they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar” John 19:15. These Paul describes as “...the rest were blinded...(...God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day” Romans 11:7-8.

God’s judgement then on those of Israel of whom He states “...they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them” 1 Samuel 8:7 is as “David saith...a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompence unto them: Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway” Romans 11:9-10.

This did happen to “the rest...blinded” Romans 10:7 and will happen in the End Times “...to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost” 1 Thessalonians 2:16 as the Lord Jesus Christ prophesied with respect to Jerusalem and the Jews for both the First and Second Advents. “...If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation...But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations; and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled” Luke 19:42-44, 21:42-43.

Today's believer should keep in mind for the purpose of ministry therefore Paul's admonition to **"They that are of a forward heart...abomination to the LORD..."** Proverbs 11:20 in Romans 2:5-6, 8-9, 11 **"But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; Who will render to every man according to his deeds...unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile...For there is no respect of persons with God."**

Paul asks and adds, note remarks under point 1 on Romans 11:1-6 and Psalm 147:19-20, Jeremiah 31:35-37, 33:19-21, 25-26, **"...Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid; but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy...For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office: If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them"** Romans 11:11, 13-14.

That was Paul's ministry right to the end.

**"...Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it"** Acts 28:25-28.

At the beginning of the apostolic ministry among the Jews **"...many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand"** Acts 4:4 but later since it was so ingrained many stuck with **"...the law of Moses..."** Joshua 8:31, 32, 23:6, 1 Kings 2:3, 2 Kings 14:6, 23:25, 2 Chronicles 23:18, 30:16, Ezra 3:2, 7:6, Nehemiah 8:1, Daniel 9:11, 13, Malachi 4:4, Luke 2:22, 24:44, John 7:23, Acts 13:39, 15:5, 28:23, 1 Corinthians 9:9 rather than **"Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ"** Galatians 6:2 as in helping folk shed the burden of sin, as the Lord Himself admonished the Jews and as Paul urged. Note these scriptures.

**"And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners? But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance"** Matthew 9:11-13.

**"Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses"** Acts 13:38-39.

**"And the day following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were present. And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry. And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are all zealous of the law: And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs. What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come. Do therefore this that we say to thee: We have four men which have a vow on them; Them take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave their heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but that thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the law...Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying**

himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them” Acts 21:18-24, 26.

That is what befell the man who said “For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God” Galatians 2:18-19.

See remarks under Romans 10:1-21, point 3 on Romans 10:14-21 and Acts 13:45-47, 50, also concluding remarks on Romans 10:1-21 and Acts 13:48-49.

“...the salvation of God...sent unto the Gentiles...” Acts 28:28 did not therefore “...provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them” Romans 11:14 to the extent that Paul had hoped that they emulate him according to Galatians 2:19 “For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God” but at least Paul could testify, as today’s believer should be able to “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith” 2 Timothy 4:7.

3. Romans 11:12-29. Paul here in Romans 11:12, 15-16 “Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fullness?...For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?” describes the advantages of Israel in obedience to, say, Deuteronomy 13:4 “Ye shall walk after the LORD your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him,” a good scripture for today’s believers, compared with “...through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles...” Romans 11:11.

Paul no doubt has in mind the Lord’s designation of Israel and the judgement that fell upon her in Jeremiah 11:16 “The LORD called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit: with the noise of a great tumult he hath kindled fire upon it, and the branches of it are broken.” Paul says of this green olive tree that “...the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches” Romans 11:16.

Paul then says of each Gentile believer, cautioning each one “...some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee...because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee” Romans 11:17-18, 20-21.

Paul is there warning the Gentile believer that “...the LORD hath chosen Jacob unto himself, and Israel for his peculiar treasure” Psalm 135:4 and that “The sons also of them that afflicted thee shall come bending unto thee; and all they that despised thee shall bow themselves down at the soles of thy feet; and they shall call thee, The city of the LORD, The Zion of the Holy One of Israel” Isaiah 60:14.

By faith, Romans 11:20, the Gentile believers should therefore believe Psalm 147:19-20, Jeremiah 31:35-37, 33:19-21, 25-26, see point 1 on Romans 11:1-6, with respect to Israel “For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance” Romans 11:29 and *not* assume that God is all through with Israel as a nation or that the Church has replaced Israel. That is how to ensure “...toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off” Romans 11:22.

Note again therefore the articles [Yes, the King James Bible IS Perfect](#) and [The Manuscript Dichotomy – Bro. Al Cuppett’s Vision Vindicated](#) and the *saved* individuals whose ministry collapsed and whose praise and worship is unclean “...because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel” Isaiah 5:20.



See also:

[defendproclaimthefait.org/blog/2102/](http://defendproclaimthefait.org/blog/2102/)

[www.chick.com/catalog/books/1289.asp](http://www.chick.com/catalog/books/1289.asp) and this extract:

### Is America on a collision course with God?

There is a direct correlation between the alarming number of massive disasters striking America and her leaders pressuring Israel to surrender her land for “peace.”

Costing hundreds of lives and causing hundreds of billions of dollars’ worth of damage, dozens of disasters, including devastating earthquakes, raging fires, hurricanes, floods, tsunamis, and tornadoes, have hit America — and always within twenty-four hours of putting pressure on Israel.

What can you do as an individual — and what can America do — to change the direction of our country in relation to Israel to prevent an increasing number of calamities?

This book has many pictures, some of which have never before been released. These unique pictures include the Nazi movement in Long Island, New York prior to World War II; the US Navy saving the Zionist movement in Palestine during World War I; and many more.

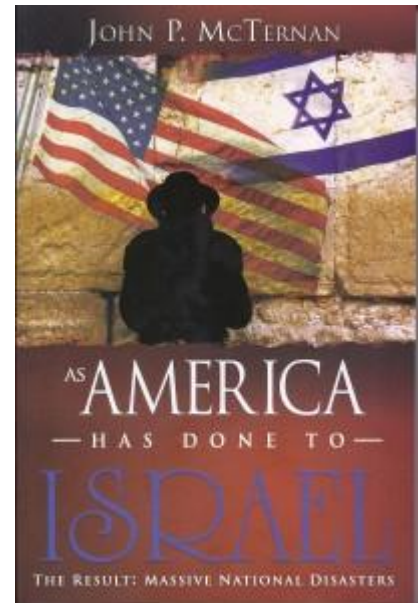
The USA and the world is set to be taught as with Gideon’s declaration **“And Gideon said, Therefore when the LORD hath delivered Zebah and Zalmunna into mine hand, then I will tear your flesh with the thorns of the wilderness and with briers...And he took the elders of the city, and thorns of the wilderness and briers, and with them he taught the men of Succoth”** Judges 8:7, 16 that **“Behold, he that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep”** Psalm 121:4.

It follows therefore, as Paul states in Romans 11:23-24, 26-28 **“And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again...how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree...And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins...as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers’ sakes.”**

Paul is here referring to those of Israel the Second Advent who will fulfil Isaiah 25:9 **“And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the LORD; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation.”**

Then shall genuinely come to pass via **“their fulness...life from the dead”** Romans 11:12, 15 for the whole world in that **“...for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more”** Isaiah 2:3-4 in that **“As the dew of Hermon, and as the dew that descended upon the mountains of Zion: for there the LORD commanded the blessing, even life for evermore”** Psalm 133:3.

That is why Paul warns Gentile believers **“For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in”** Romans 11:25. It is because **“of this mystery... that blindness in part is happened to Israel”** in turn **“That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel”** Ephesians 3:6.



That is, however, only “...until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in” at which time the Lord says of today’s believers “...I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also” John 14:3 *after which*, as a real incentive *now* to “...Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved...” Acts 16:31, shall come to pass following the Second Advent, *with the nation of Israel pre-eminent among the nations, noting Isaiah 25:9 again, Isaiah 49:23* “And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: they shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet; and thou shalt know that I am the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me.”

4. Romans 11:30-36. Paul here in Romans 11:30 “For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief” reminds Gentile believers with respect to the Jews in that “...through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles...” Romans 11:11 the special privileges that Gentile believers now enjoy, as Paul explains to the Ephesians.

“Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ” Galatians 2:11-13.

Paul therefore enjoins mercy on the Gentile believers’ part to “...my kinsmen, my brethren according to the flesh” Romans 9:3 because God has been merciful to all so “...that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all” Romans 11:31-32.

See remarks above under point 2 on Romans 11:7-11 with respect to Matthew 9:11-13, Acts 13:38-39, 21:18-24, 26, 28:25-28, Galatians 2:18:19 concerning that challenge. Today’s believer should therefore “...by the grace of God...” 1 Corinthians 15:10, 2 Corinthians 1:12, Hebrews 2:9 when dealing with Jewish sceptics especially seek to follow Paul’s exhortation as follows.

“And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will” 2 Timothy 2:24-26.

Paul concludes this chapter with a benediction “...unto the glory and praise of God” Philippians 1:11 citing or alluding to Old Testament scriptures, Deuteronomy 29:29, Job 11:7, 15:8, Psalm 36:6, Isaiah 40:13, Jeremiah 23:18, “O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!...For who hath known the mind of the Lord?...Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen” Romans 11:33-36.

It therefore befits Paul’s benediction “...unto the glory and praise of God” Philippians 1:11 to conclude this study with similar praise to God by means of scriptures from both the Old and New Testaments, noting that today’s believer is for “...the hope of the gospel...made a minister” Colossians 1:23 as Paul was and remembering again the Lord’s “...mercy upon all” Romans 11:32.

“It is of the LORD’S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is thy faithfulness” Lamentations 3:22-23.

“Wherefore David blessed the LORD before all the congregation: and David said, Blessed be thou, LORD God of Israel our father, for ever and ever. Thine, O LORD, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine; thine is the kingdom, O LORD, and thou art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honour come of thee, and thou reignest over all; and in thine hand is power and might; and in thine hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all. Now therefore, our God, we thank thee, and praise thy glorious name...for all things come of thee, and of thine own have we given thee” 1 Chronicles 29:10-14.

“Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight: If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister” Colossians 1:12-23.

## The Redeemer

By Siegfried Sassoon

[www.poetryfoundation.org/poem/171921](http://www.poetryfoundation.org/poem/171921)

Darkness: the rain sluiced down; the mire was deep;  
It was past twelve on a mid-winter night,  
When peaceful folk in beds lay snug asleep;  
There, with much work to do before the light,  
We lugged our clay-sucked boots as best we might  
Along the trench; sometimes a bullet sang,  
And droning shells burst with a hollow bang;  
We were soaked, chilled and wretched, every one;  
Darkness; the distant wink of a huge gun.

I turned in the black ditch, loathing the storm;  
A rocket fizzed and burned with blanching flare,  
And lit the face of what had been a form  
Floundering in murk. He stood before me there;  
I say that He was Christ; stiff in the glare,  
And leaning forward from His burdening task,  
Both arms supporting it; His eyes on mine  
Stared from the woeful head that seemed a mask  
Of mortal pain in Hell's unholy shine.

No thorny crown, only a woollen cap  
He wore — an English soldier, white and strong,  
Who loved his time like any simple chap,  
Good days of work and sport and homely song;  
Now he has learned that nights are very long,  
And dawn a watching of the windowed sky.  
But to the end, unjudging, he'll endure  
Horror and pain, not discontent to die  
That Lancaster on Lune may stand secure.

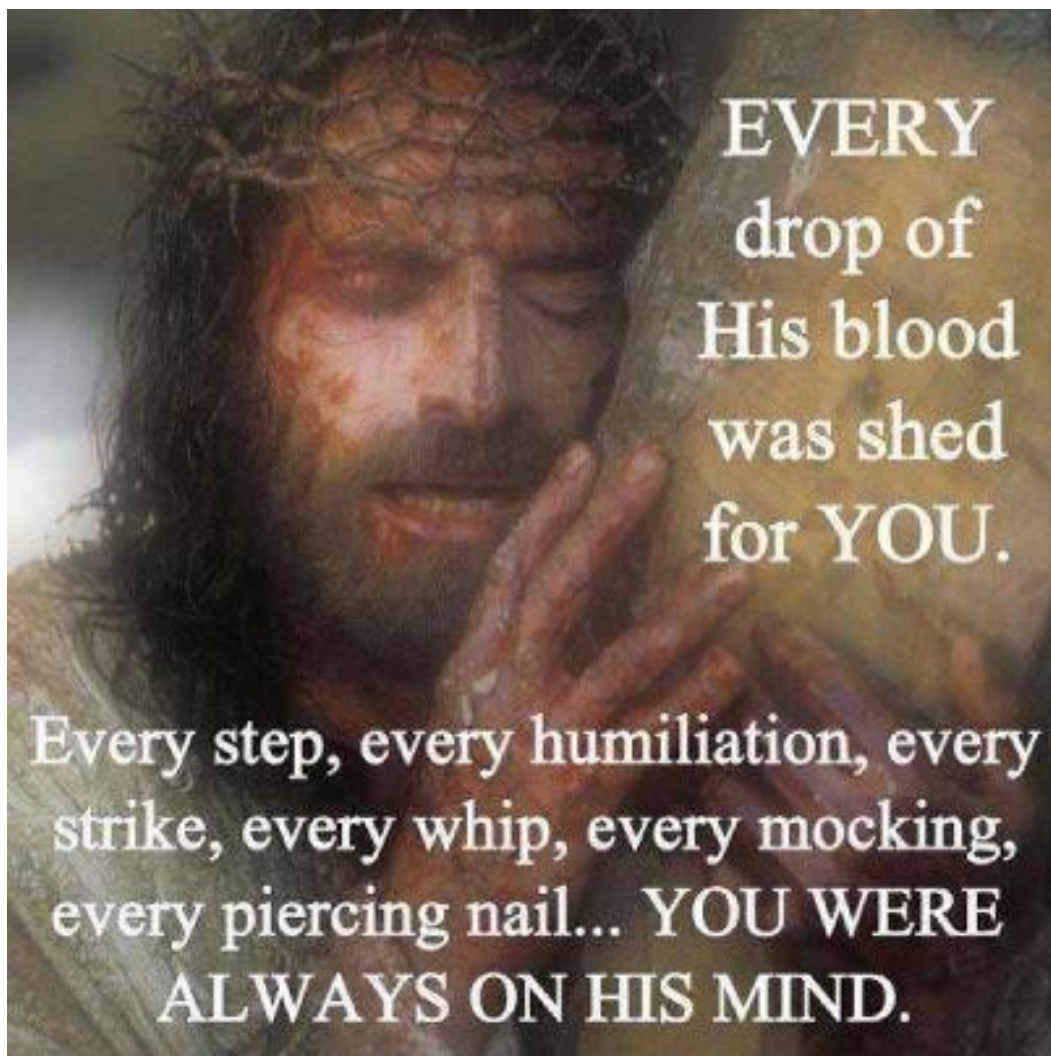
He faced me, reeling in his weariness,  
Shouldering his load of planks, so hard to bear.  
I say that He was Christ, who wrought to bless  
All groping things with freedom bright as air,  
And with His mercy washed and made them fair.  
Then the flame sank, and all grew black as pitch,  
While we began to struggle along the ditch...

### The Redeemer – Explanatory Note

The enclosed WW1 poem depicts how men are in this life. Occasionally they may get a glimpse of the Redeemer when a faithful follower of His bears witness to Him. Unlike the men in the poem lit briefly by *Hell's unholy shine* they can turn to ***“the light of the glorious gospel of Christ”*** 2 Corinthians 4:4 but all too often they don't and continue to flounder in pitch black darkness until they go to ***“A land of darkness, as darkness itself; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and where the light is as darkness”*** Job 10:22.

The last two lines of the poem have been omitted because they take the Lord's name in vain.

Nevertheless the imagery of the poem makes clear that today's believer is himself to be ***“as unto a light that shineth in a dark place...”*** 2 Peter 1:19 steadfastly making known the Lord Jesus Christ ***“In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins”*** Colossians 1:14.



[www.pinterest.com/tonya033/i-love-jesus/](http://www.pinterest.com/tonya033/i-love-jesus/)

***“But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed”*** Isaiah 53:5



## Romans 1 and the Gospel of Christ

### Introduction

Romans 1:16 reads ***“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.”***

Popular modern versions such as the NIVs cut the words ***“of Christ”*** out of Romans 1:16 and create the misleading impression that the scripture contains only one gospel. This is not so.

This work shows that ***“the gospel of Christ”*** is one of a number of gospels that the scripture reveals and that cutting the words ***“of Christ”*** out of Romans 1:16 is traceable to corrupt sources that embody the texts of Rome and Watchtower. Paul’s admonition should there be obeyed.

***“But prove all things: hold fast that which is good”*** 1 Thessalonians 5:21.

### Not One but Ten Gospels in Scripture

Cited references and annotations are given in [blue braces \[\]](#).

Dr Ruckman points out that not *one* but *ten* gospels are found in the New Testament. See the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1233, 1283, 1547, 1557, 1608, 1658.

[The first four gospels](#) are the four Gospel accounts, Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, each with a different emphasis on the Lord Jesus Christ as manifestations of ***“the branch”*** Jeremiah 23:5, Zechariah 3:8, 6:12-13, Isaiah 4:2 *and each in a different original language*. See *King James Bible Supremacy* p 1 [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) and this extract.

Dr Riplinger notes that Herman Hoskier identified 2<sup>nd</sup> century Greek-Latin-Syriac polyglot New Testaments i.e. in parallel [\[www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html\]](http://www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html) *Hazardous Materials* by G. A. Riplinger pp 1097ff, indicating that Koine Greek was *not* dominant for the New Testament even in the early church]. Moreover, Dr Riplinger, her emphases, has stated directly to this writer that *“In Foxe’s Book of Martyrs, vol. 4, pp 671-675, Foxe quotes an old “treatise”...“Also the four evangelists wrote the gospel in divers languages, as Matthew in Judea, Mark in Italy, Luke in Achaia, and John in Asia. And all these wrote in the languages of the same countries...”*” That is, parts of the New Testament were *first* written in *different* languages and existed in *parallel* to facilitate to the utmost ***“obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name...Jesus Christ”*** Romans 1:5-6.

[The fifth gospel](#) is ***“this gospel of the kingdom,”*** which will be preached during the great tribulation after the rapture of the church and will require faith *and* works for salvation, Matthew 24:13, 14, 21, Hebrews 3:6, 14, Revelation 12:17, 14:12, 22:14. See Dr Ruckman’s study *The Big Flap*.

[The sixth gospel](#) is ***“the gospel of the grace of God”*** Acts 20:24 that Paul preached as ***“the gospel of Christ”*** Romans 1:16 and which he defines in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4. This gospel is the gospel for the church age and terminates at the rapture of the church.

[The seventh gospel](#) is the entire body of sound doctrine that Paul wrote for the church age and which he termed ***“my gospel”*** Romans 2:16 and ***“the glorious gospel of the blessed God”*** 1 Timothy 1:10-11. It is the doctrinal content of all of Paul’s New Testament writings said explicitly to be by him i.e. Romans-Philemon and is definitive for the church age. Confusion arises when attempts are made to force transitional passages in Matthew, Acts, Hebrews, James into Pauline doctrine for the church age. These futile and misleading attempts arise in turn from failure in ***“rightly dividing the word of truth”*** 2 Timothy 2:15, a failure compounded by most modern versions including the NIVs that took away that essential principle for correct Bible study – as well as changing the word ***“Study”*** – likewise the NKJV - in open defiance of the Lord’s command in John 5:39 ***“Search the scriptures,”*** which they also changed – likewise the NKJV - at the behest of their Genesis 3:1 ***“Yea, hath God said...?”*** overall translation committee co-ordinator.



The **eighth gospel** is the gospel of armed warfare preached to the nation of Israel that God would give them victory in the military conquest of the land of Canaan to the extent that they obeyed Him, Numbers 13:30, 14:6-9, Hebrews 4:2.

The **ninth gospel** is the gospel that the Lord Jesus Christ preached to the saints in paradise or **"Abraham's bosom"** Luke 16:22 that His sacrifice had cleared their sins so that He could take them on high with Him when He ascended to heaven, Matthew 12:40, Luke 16:22, 23:42-43, Romans 3:24-25, Ephesians 4:8-10, Hebrews 9:15, 1 Peter 4:6. God forgave, or remitted the sins of Old Testament saints e.g. David, Psalm 32:5, but the Old Testament saints could not be redeemed until Calvary, Luke 23:33 (don't look for the word **"Calvary"** in the NIVs, it isn't there). That is why Old Testament saints did not go to heaven at death but to Abraham's bosom **"in the heart of the earth"** Matthew 12:40 until the Lord released them.

The **tenth gospel** is **"the everlasting gospel"** Revelation 14:6, which, like the **fifth gospel**, on the kingdom, is preached during or near the end of the great tribulation, Matthew 24:21, Revelation 7:14 but by angels, not men and emphasises not worshipping the beast in order to stay saved, Revelation 14:6-11. Note how Matthew 24:13 and Revelation 14:12 match for tribulation salvation.

**"But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved"** Matthew 24:13.

**"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus"** Revelation 14:12.

In sum, the scripture reveals *ten* gospels not one and whoever would obscure that Biblical information by condoning the NIVs' etc. cutting **"of Christ"** from Romans 1:16 **"hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace"** Hebrews 10:29.

## The Sixth Gospel

The sixth gospel is ***“the gospel of the grace of God”*** Acts 20:24 that Paul preached as ***“the gospel of Christ”*** Romans 1:16 and which he defined in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4.

***“Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures”*** 1 Corinthians 15:1-4. The emphasis is on genuine belief for salvation, i.e. faith without any works for salvation.

This gospel is the gospel for the church age and terminates at the rapture of the church. Paul makes repeated allusions to this gospel in the letters where he is identified as the author i.e. Romans to Philemon. Paul is emphatic that this gospel requires *no works* for salvation but solely the ***“faith of Jesus Christ”*** Romans 3:22 on the part of the believer *and gifted to the believer* Ephesians 2:8-9, *who in turn is eternally secure*. ***“The gospel of the grace of God”*** Acts 20:24 that Paul preached as ***“the gospel of Christ”*** Romans 1:16 is all ***“Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour”*** Titus 1:4 as these Pauline scriptures show.

***“But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe...Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus”*** Romans 3:21-22, 24.

***“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God...For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life...(For if by one man’s offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life”*** Romans 5:1-2, 7-10, 17-18.

***“...The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation”*** Romans 10:8-10.

***“To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved...That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise”*** Ephesians 1:6, 12-13.

***“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast...But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ”*** Ephesians 2:8-9, 13.

***“But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ”*** 2 Thessalonians 2:13-14.

**“...be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God; Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel”** 2 Timothy 1:8-10.

**“Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life”** Titus 3:5-7 noting that again with respect to eternal security that is germane to **“the gospel of the grace of God”** Acts 20:24 **“Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast...”** Hebrews 6:19.

## **“The Cry of Sodom” – Genesis 18:20**



**“The LORD rained upon Sodom...fire from the LORD” Genesis 19:24<sup>4</sup>**

### **Introduction – “as it was in the days of Lot” Luke 17:28**

The Lord said **“Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot;...But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all”** Luke 17:28-29.

He then said in Luke 17:30 that a return to **“the days of Lot”** would point to His Return.

**“Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.”**

References to God’s destruction of Sodom and **“the days of Lot”** are therefore found in the later New Testament letters that look towards the Lord’s Return in fiery judgement, 2 Thessalonians 1:7-9, such as overtook Sodom. See the *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 1629, 1641.

**“And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)”** 2 Peter 2:6-8.

**“Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire”** Jude 7.

The ultimate instigation of **“the days of Lot”** in this country came on March 15<sup>th</sup> 2012<sup>5</sup>.

**“The government has launched a 12-week consultation on allowing gay [i.e. sodomite] couples in England and Wales to marry.”** Sodomite ‘marriage’ became the law of the land in England on March 29<sup>th</sup> 2014 [www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-26793127](http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-26793127) but **never “the law of Christ”** Galatians 6:2.

Sodomite ‘marriage’ shows that **“according to the scriptures”** 1 Corinthians 15:3, 4, the Lord’s Return is near. These are **“the last days”** of the **“perilous times”** 2 Timothy 3:1, [www.jesus-is-savior.com/Basics/sodom.htm](http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Basics/sodom.htm), *Europe and America are Becoming a Giant Sodom and Gomorrah!*

One aspect of *“the days of Lot”* is *“the cry of Sodom”* Genesis 18:20, and its relation to *“the men of Sodom...wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly”* Genesis 13:13.

### **“The Cry of Sodom” – the Biblical Witnesses**

***“And the LORD said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know”*** Genesis 18:20-21.

Most pre-1611 Bibles support the reading ***“cry of Sodom;”*** the Coverdale, Great, Bishops’, Geneva Bibles. The Wycliffe Bible partially supports it with *“the cry of men of Sodom.”* Early post-1611 versions, Challoner’s Revision 1749-1752, 1885 RV, 1901 ASV support ***“cry of Sodom.”***

The modern bibles change the reading. The RSV, NRSV, 1984 NIV, 2005 TNIV, 2011 NIV, NKJV, JB, NJB, NWT, CEV, NCV, NLT, ESV, HCSB have ***“outcry against Sodom”*** or similar and the NASV has *“outcry of Sodom.”* This is a change of *meaning* but, typically, *it is not for the better.*

### **“Outcry against Sodom” – What Outcry?**

The change to *“outcry”* is wrong. See Jude 7 and Genesis 19:24-25.

***“Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; And he overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground.”***

No outcry occurred against Sodom. ***“God destroyed the cities of the plain”*** Genesis 19:29 ***“and all the inhabitants of the cities”*** with the exception of Zoar at Lot’s request, Genesis 19:20-23, because they were all engaged in Sodom’s ***“very grievous”*** sin, apart from ***“just Lot”*** whom God delivered. In a city ***“overthrown by the mouth of the wicked”*** Proverbs 11:11, God will spare ***“the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof”*** Ezekiel 9:4-6 but God spared none of ***“the men of Sodom.”*** What, then, of the criers?

### **“The Cry of Sodom” – the Child Victims**

The cry of a city in scripture is of *its citizens* and is of *distress*. ***“...and the cry of the city went up to heaven”*** 1 Samuel 5:12. See also Jeremiah 11:12, 14:2, 51:54 but note Genesis 19:4-5:

***“But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.”***

***“...all the people”*** were guilty, whether they ***“commit such things...worthy of death”*** or ***“have pleasure in them that do them”*** Romans 1:32. *The only ones crying in distress were victims, child victims. Only they could have cried “unto me.”* That is why ***“God destroyed the cities of the plain,”*** for sodomy and paedophilia, mercifully delivering the victims by sudden death.

### **“Occupy till I come” Luke 19:13**

Government strategy is ***“...as it was in the days of Lot.”*** *“They want the world to become like Sodom”<sup>6</sup> and new versions conceal the danger to children even though psychiatrists confirm it<sup>7</sup>. “...2-4% of men attracted to adults prefer men...; in contrast...25-40% of men attracted to children prefer boys...Thus the rate of homosexual attraction is [at least] 6-20 times higher among pedophiles”*

Nevertheless, ***“Occupy till I come”*** Luke 19:13 because ***“turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes...The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished”*** 2 Peter 2:6, 9.



## Congregation of Hypocrites and Sinners as Sodom

From this writer's work published some years ago entitled *Britain Under Siege* pp 7-9, 28, 37-38, 42-49 somewhat dated but still relevant. A graphic has been added, references are given in [blue braces \[\]](#) and 2015 update notes in [blue text](#).

### 4

## The Advance of Rome and Her Allies

With the main weapon of defence effectively neutralised, Rome has made great strides in subjugating this nation in accordance with Cardinal Manning's vision. Adrian Hilton writes [*The Principality and Power of Europe*, Adrian Hilton, Dorchester House Publications, 1997, now available in a second, revised edition, December 2000] p 48, 52:

*In 1953, the Queen swore an oath at her Coronation 'to govern the peoples of the United Kingdom according to their laws and customs' and 'to maintain the Protestant reformed religion established by law.' Both of these are negated by the process of deeper European integration. In a continent in which 61 million claim a Protestant heritage and 199 million profess to be Roman Catholics, it is simply not possible to maintain Protestantism by democratic law. In an age where all the old institutions-Monarchy, Parliament and Church-are being discredited and marginalised, the Roman Catholic Church is being given an open invitation to fill the vacuum created and set a moral agenda to stabilise an uncertain society. It will be perceived as an unchanging bedrock upon which a new order may be constructed. Its plea will be for Britain, as for Europe, to seek out its lost soul and restore its 'Christian' spirituality. The more the Church of England is perceived as a failure, the greater the opportunity will be for the Church of Rome to proceed with its 'evangelisation' and absorb Britain into a Catholic Europe.*

How effective are the Vatican's present tactics? Hilton concludes [*The Principality and Power of Europe*] p 48:

*All the direct military assaults on Britain from the Spanish Armada to World War II were manifest failures, but the modern tactics of encirclement and erosion are bearing fruit. The Catholic Herald recently stated: 'The days of the Anglican Church are numbered, and most of its worshippers will return to the true faith of their distant medieval forbears.'*

Garland and Gray [*VC's of the Air*, John Frayn Turner, George G. Harrap & Co. Ltd, 1960] did not die in vain but neither did the enemy perish with the demise of the Wehrmacht in 1945. She merely changed her tactics. Hitler and Mussolini were both Roman Catholics who made concordats or political agreements with the Vatican [*The Principality and Power of Europe*] p 31-32 in order to fulfil her aim of world domination but the complexities of the post war era demanded a new approach. Michael de Semlyen writes [*All Roads Lead to Rome?*, Michael de Semlyen, Dorchester House Publications, 1991] p 60:

*In England [Rome] adopts a high moral tone, represented in the Media as being firmer than that of any other part of the perceived Church. Cardinal Hume has emerged at the centre of our national life speaking with authority and clarity about the great moral issues of the day. Committed Catholics lead Christians in the fight against the abortion legislation\*. The same Catholic leaders have founded the new Movement for Christian Democracy, 'an all-party, non denominational organisation committed to bringing Christian values back into British political life'.*

\*2015 update. While publicly opposing abortion, Rome has long practised infanticide. See [Alberto p 12 www.chick.com/catalog/comics/0112.asp](#).

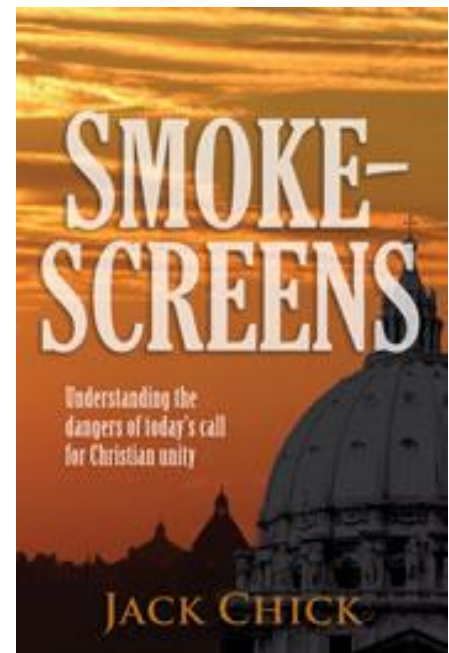
The late Cardinal Hume has of course been eulogised in the media. Other striking examples of Rome's projection of her "high moral tone" include the anti-abortion campaigner David Alton and the prominent writers Joanna Bogle, contributor to Family Education Trust's informative work *Feminism vs. Mankind* and Lynette Burrows, author of *The Fight for the Family*, another excellent publication by Family Education Trust. There is no doubt about the sincerity of these courageous



individuals and the vital importance of their work for traditional family values but neither is there any doubt about the potential advantage to Rome's false image of impeccability. Mrs Burrows was nominated 'Catholic Woman of the Year' in 1986 [*Full Circle?*, Digby Anderson, The Social Affairs Unit, 1988] and Mrs Bogle, who regards popery as *the natural faith of the English* [*Mass Conversion*, Anne McElvoy, *The Times Magazine*, July 29<sup>th</sup>, 1995], has stated, *ibid*:

*It ought to be easy to be a triumphalist Catholic in Britain today. Has our Church not reached the very position that generations of loyal Catholics worked and prayed to achieve? We are the largest religious denomination in Britain in terms of actual members attending worship...The Anglican Church is seen to be in disarray, its financial position dire, its membership dropping steadily...the C of E has lost its sense of 'presence'. It does not seem to know what it is for. The really nasty letters are from Anglicans accusing me of promoting the conversion of England. Well of course I am. I can't see how any true English Catholic can fail to thrill to that idea.*

Mrs Bogle is wrong on a number of counts. The *natural faith of the English* derives from Apostolic Christianity, not Roman Catholicism [*The Trumpet Sounds for Britain*, Volume 1, David E. Gardner, Christian Foundation Publications, 1980, Chapter 2], which no doubt explains why the English named their principal church after Paul, not Peter. The work of *generations of loyal Catholics* included the Gunpowder Plot of November 1605, to murder James 1 just after he had sanctioned the translation of the AV1611 [*Jesuit Plots from Elizabethan to Modern Times*, Albert Close, The Protestant Truth Society]. *Loyal Catholics*, including Patrick Magee, released after the "Good Friday Agreement", carried out the Brighton bombing in October 1984 in which five innocent people were killed. *Loyal Catholics* are mainly responsible for the more than 3,000 deaths by terrorism in Ulster since the present "troubles" began in 1968 [*The Province of Terror*, *Intelligence Digest*, 1990] and continue to be the major obstacle by far to a genuine resolution of those "troubles", despite the boasts of New Labour. See any issue of *The Burning Bush*, by Rev. Ivan Foster, [www.ivanfoster.org/](http://www.ivanfoster.org/).



Mrs Bogle should consider the words of veteran tract publisher, Jack Chick [*Smokescreens*, Jack T. Chick, Chick Publications [www.chick.com/catalog/books/0153.asp](http://www.chick.com/catalog/books/0153.asp)] p 32.

*I once read that "Rome when in minority is as gentle as a lamb, when in equality is as clever as a fox, and when in the majority is as fierce as a tiger." I believe that this is an accurate description.*

Regrettably, Mrs Bogle is right in one respect. The Vatican is a nation state [*Are Roman Catholics Christians?*, Jack T. Chick, Chick Publications, 1985]. A Roman Catholic is a citizen of that state and the first loyalty of a "good Catholic" is therefore to the Vatican. As Mrs Bogle states, it follows that a "loyal Catholic" will labour to bring the country in which he or she lives under the heel of Rome, after the vision of Cardinal Manning. Rome is well placed to achieve this objective, with HRH Prince Charles' attendances at mass [*The Monarchy in Peril*, Spirit of '88, UPC, 1996], the Roman Catholic Cherie Blair married to the Prime Minister and the Roman Catholic Anne Widdecombe recently appointed as shadow Home Secretary.

Sadly, there is a price to pay for trusting the pope. Dr. Dennis Lloyd has listed *Papal Blessings and Curses* down through history in his newsletter [*The Stand*, Vol. 1, No. 29, October/November 1995, Dr. Dennis Lloyd, Auckland, New Zealand, *The Stand*, Vol. 2, No. 1, December/January 1995/96]. In 1961, the same year that the NEB New Testament was published, *Queen Elizabeth visited the Pope, complying with his request to be dressed in black. Since then her proud Empire has collapsed and her remnant Island is seeking to lose its identity and be gobbled up in Europe under the Treaty of Rome, to be subjugated as surely as though the Pope's protégé, Hitler, had won the war.*

*On 5 October 1972 Prime Minister Edward Heath of Great Britain audiences with the Pope. On 17 December 1973 Britain drifts into its grimmest economic and industrial crisis since World War 2. On 4 March 1974 the Conservative Party is defeated. Edward Heath resigns and in February 1975 he is deposed from party leadership by Mrs Thatcher. The British Government allowed the pope to visit these shores in 1982 [The Papal Visit weighed and found wanting, J.E. North, Focus Publications, Sussex, 1982] and two years later suffered the Brighton bombing. In spite of surviving that horror, Mrs Thatcher unwisely signed the Anglo-Irish Agreement in 1985, no doubt in accordance with Rome's wishes. A few years later she was deposed from party leadership herself. Moreover, tragedy continued to dog the Royal Family in return for its dalliance with Rome. Jack Chick writes [Battle Cry, Chick Publications, January/February 1986, May/June 1993].*

*Britain's Princess Diana stands by Pope John Paul II during a recent private papal audience for her and Prince Charles. The Princess is dressed in black. Vatican protocol requires that visiting royalty wear black, the colour of mourning and humiliation, if they are not Roman Catholic. Charles and Diana separated in December 1992 after an unhappy marriage, and divorced in August 1996. A year later, September 1997, Diana was killed in a car accident in Paris [Diana, Princess of Wales, [www.royal.gov.uk/family/diana.htm](http://www.royal.gov.uk/family/diana.htm)]. Concerning the CD *Candle in the Wind* released after Diana's death one should read Job 21:17, 18, **"How oft is the CANDLE of the wicked put out! and how oft cometh their destruction upon them! God distributeth sorrows in his anger. They are as stubble before THE WIND, and as the chaff that the storm carrieth away."***

\*2015 update. Page no longer available, see [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Diana,\\_Princess\\_of\\_Wales](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Diana,_Princess_of_Wales).

British Royalty has voluntarily associated with many evil systems and Royal Assent underlies all the evil enactments inflicted upon this nation in the last 50 years.

[www.christianvoice.org.uk/index.php/britain-in-sin/](http://www.christianvoice.org.uk/index.php/britain-in-sin/) p 3.

**"Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law?"**  
Psalm 94:20...

## 8

### Sodom and Egypt...

Dr. Lloyd [*The Stand*, Vol. IX, No. 2, Feb/March 1999] p 43-44 reveals what may yet be Britain's last line of defence, if any defenders are prepared to man it. He cites Peter Hitchens, *International Express* October 1998. *Too much democracy can destroy freedom. Nobody should ever forget that Adolf Hitler (a Roman Catholic who has never been disfellowshipped from his "church" - Dr. Lloyd) came to power by purely democratic means and persuaded the German parliament to cut its own throat. That is why Tony Blair's (another pope's puppet trying to bring Britain to its knees for Rome - Dr. Lloyd) attack on the House of Lords is not just destructive and ill thought out, but dangerous too. There are plenty of good arguments in favour of the House of Lords staying as it is and it is a sign of the Tories' current gutless cowardice that they have decided to retreat (with the great help of Roman Catholics among them - Dr. Lloyd) without a proper fight. There is one argument that is not just good, but crucial. It rests on Section 2 of the 1911 Parliament Act. (Rome wants to delete such acts that prevent her taking over the UK - Dr. Lloyd) which left the key to dictatorship in the hands of the Lords, because they were seen as safe guardians of freedom (exactly). It is this: The House of Commons cannot vote to extend its life beyond five years, unless the Lords agree. It is one of the central clauses of our Constitution, a guarantee against arbitrary power. If the Lords and the Commons both became Chambers of Toadies, doing the bidding of Downing Street, the Prime Minister will quietly gain the sort of power that dictators yearn for (Like all the Roman Catholic countries whose dictators do the Pope's bidding for him. The pope will be ruler and complete rule giver. I have said it before and will say it again. Blair is a puppet of the pope. There are many Tories as well as Labour members of the Government who are Roman Catholics, who are traitors to their country in being faithful to the Pope of Rome. It is the House of Lords and the Monarchy that is in*

*the way of Rome taking over the United Kingdom completely* - Dr. Lloyd.) On November 11<sup>th</sup> 1999, 666 (!) hereditary peers were ejected from the Lords, leaving only 92...

See [news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/uk\\_politics/515273.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/uk_politics/515273.stm).

**“And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none”** Ezekiel 22:30.

Will this be Britain’s epitaph? As well as being afflicted with the diseases of Egypt, Britain has also committed the sins of Sodom. The first mention of the word **“sinner”** in the Bible is in association with Sodom.

**“But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the Lord exceedingly”** Genesis 13:13.

**“Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womenkind: it is abomination”** Leviticus 18:22.

**“For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet”** Romans 1:26-27.

These references and Jude 7 describe God’s abhorrence of the sins of Sodom and His judgement on them, both here and hereafter. Jude 7 also indicates that tolerance of fornication leads to tolerance of sodomy. Toleration of sodomy has led in the past few decades to a weakening of laws against this evil practice which has allowed sodomites to develop into an aggressive force for helping to destroy the traditional family. Stephen Green [*The Sexual Dead End*, Stephen Green, Broadview Books, 1992] p 450 has reprinted a summary of the sodomite agenda, as penned by activist Michael Swift in 1987, now dead, from AIDS.

*We shall sodomize your sons, emblems of your feeble masculinity, of your shallow dreams and vulgar lies. The family unit-spawning ground of lies, betrayals, mediocrity, hypocrisy and violence-will be abolished. The family unit which only dampens imagination and curbs free will, must be eliminated.*

The flawed studies of Kinsey, published about 50 years ago in the USA are the basis for the oft-repeated notion that 10% of the population are practising sodomites. The real figure is much lower. A survey carried out by the US Government in 1989 showed that practising sodomites are actually less than 2% of the population. A British survey carried out by the Wellcome Trust in 1992 found a similar figure, of less than 1.5% and concluded that this result was *consistent with those from other recent studies in Europe and the United States* [*The Sexual Dead End*] p 58-59, 62, [*Homosexuality: The Case Against Liberalisation*, The Christian Institute] p 2. However, the political influence of sodomites is far out of proportion with their numbers. The Commons has voted twice to reduce the age of consent for practising sodomites to 16, in June 1998 and January 1999. Each time, the Lords, led by Baroness Young voted against the Commons, in July 1998 and April 1999. After the July 1998 vote, sodomites harassed the peers with shouts of *“fascist scum”*, *“parasites”* and *“your days are numbered”* [*Faith in the Family Advocate*, The Christian Institute, Issue 1, December 1998 p 14], exactly after the manner of the original sodomites, Genesis 19:9. Nevertheless, sodomites continue to be especially feted by the present government. This was shown by the attendance of Dr. Jack Cunningham MP, Mo Mowlam MP and practising sodomite Chris Smith MP at the dinner for the sodomites’ rights group, Stonewall, sponsored by the National Westminster Bank at the Savoy Hotel on May 20<sup>th</sup> 1999 [*Faith in the Family Advocate*, The Christian Institute, Issue 3, July 1999] p 4.

Such patronage is not surprising. Rev. Ivan Foster has stated [*The Burning Bush*, Rev. Ivan Foster, Kilskeery Free Presbyterian Church, Omagh, Co. Tyrone, Northern Ireland, February 1994, [www.ivanfoster.org/](http://www.ivanfoster.org/)] *MPs such as Edwina Curry have been campaigning for the lowering of the age of consent for sodomites from 21 to 16. Sodomy ought not to be legal at any age. It is as morally*



*corruptive, if not more so, as murder. It is a vile and wicked abnormality that has ever been the mark of a society depraved and debauched by religious apostasy. The departure from God's word by the churches of the nation has led to God giving men up to their evil appetites, Romans 1:26-27. He states further [The Burning Bush, November 1997] In policy and practice we have the most wicked bunch of leaders that have ever blighted this United Kingdom...*

The threat posed by sodomites with political power, although small in number is further illustrated by a recent publication entitled *The Pink Swastika*, by Scott Lively and Kevin Abrams [[www.thepinkswastika.com/](http://www.thepinkswastika.com/)] and documents the integral part that homosexuals had in the Nazi party. It points out that the Nazis were known as *a gang of homosexuals, thugs and drunks*. A doctor from an institute that treated homosexuals in pre-war Germany claimed, *Not ten percent of those men...were sexually normal*. The book documents that Hitler appointed homosexuals to key positions in his government. Hitler had murdered the homosexual Ernst Röhm, commander of the SA or 'Storm Section' in 1934 [*History of the Second World War, Volume 1, Purnell & Sons Ltd., London, 1966*] p 5 but that was because he feared the latter's power, not because Röhm was a sodomite. He also removed Fritsch, Commander-in-Chief of the Army in 1938, on a fictitious charge of homosexuality for the same reason [*History of the Second World War, Volume 1*] p 10. Evidently Nazi sodomites were safe if they agreed with Hitler's politics.

Lively and Abrams have therefore corroborated the studies by Mr. Hilton [*The Principality and Power of Europe*], Mr Green [*The Sexual Dead End*], Mrs. Riches [*Sex and Social Engineering, Valerie Riches, Family Education Trust, 1999*] and Mrs. Burrows [*The Fight for The Family, Lynette Burrows, Family Education Trust, Oxford, March 1999*] bringing together Catholic politicians, population control freaks and practising sodomites. There is yet a further link with Bible perversion. Mrs. Riplinger [*Which Bible is God's Word?, Dr. Gail Riplinger, A. V. Publications, 2007, p 43*] states that the translation stylist for the NIV, Dr. Virginia Mollenkott *readily admits her "homosexuality"* and reveals that the NIV Old Testament Chairman, Martin Woudstra, professor at Calvin College supports the sodomite group posing as Christians, who call themselves *Evangelicals Concerned* [*The Language of the King James Bible, Dr. Gail Riplinger, A.V. Publications Corp., P.O. Box 280, Ararat, VA, [www.avpublications.com](http://www.avpublications.com), 1998*] p 115. Rev. Ivan Foster provides further evidence [*The Burning Bush, February 1997*].

Virginia Mollenkott, consultant for NIV translating committee, stated in an interview for the June 1991 *Episcopal Monthly* that *my lesbianism has always been a part of me...what I did ultimately realise was that God created me as I was and that this is where life was meaningful*. *Christianity and Crisis*, Nov. 9, 1987 reports her as stating that *forcing gay Christians into silence also denies them the opportunity to celebrate in gratitude to God for their authentic nature and for their life enriching mutual relationship with a loving partner*. It is little wonder that the Biblical term "**sodomite**" does not appear in the NIV. Nor is it any wonder that evangelical Christianity in Britain, which supports this version, is seeing no revival.

Rev. Foster and Dr. Lloyd have documented extensively the spread of moral corruption for which Rome is largely responsible and which continues to threaten this nation. In what follows, I have tabled extracts from their publications for the last 5 years only.

Priests at St. Anthony's Franciscan seminary, Santa Barbara, California, were found to have molested 34 youths aged between 14-16 from 1964 to 1987, [*The Burning Bush, 1994*] January.

Priest John Gerard Smythe received 9 charges of indecent assault against children which he carried out over a period of 24 years, [*The Burning Bush, 1994*] February.

Priest Brendan Smyth, 67, was sentenced to 4 years gaol for 17 charges of indecent assault against 5 boys and 3 girls, carried out between 1964-1988. Priest Daniel John Curran, 44, was accused of assaults on 9 young boys, carried out between 1990-1994, [*The Burning Bush, 1994*] July-August. He was found guilty on 18 charges concerning the boys and gaoled for 7 years [*The Burning Bush, 1995*] February, July.

Bishop Eamonn Casey was found to have fathered an illegitimate son in 1974, [*The Burning Bush*, 1994] September.

Priest Liam Cosgrove, 68, was found dead in sodomite sauna club in Dublin, [*The Burning Bush*, 1994] December. He had not been there to “minister”.

No fewer than 12 priests were under investigation in Ulster and the Irish Republic for crimes against children in January 1995, [*The Burning Bush*, 1995] January.

Priest Joseph Scally, was wanted by the RUC in 1982 for 12 counts of gross indecency and indecent assault against children. He was later charged with 5 sex offences against boys [*The Burning Bush*, 1995] June, July/August.

Priests Gerard John McCallion, 47, William Bernard Gallagher, 56, Joseph Laurence Reid, 43 and John Donovan, 74, were all charged with indecent assaults against children. 80 priests in the past 2 years are reported as having received treatment for paedophile tendencies in a Dublin clinic. McCallion was gaoled for 2 years on 9 charges of indecency against 3 young girls [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] February. The *Calvary Contender*, Volume 12, No. 19, states that 10,000 of 57,000 Catholic priests in the USA may be sodomites, although some bishops put the figure at 40% and maintain that 3,000 may be paedophiles. It is estimated that 50% of Catholic priests do not adhere to their celibacy vows, [*The Burning Bush*, 1995] October.

Priest John Brendan McCabe, 43, received 12 charges of indecent assault against a 10 year old boy. He was imprisoned for 20 months, for offences committed between 1979-1985 [*The Burning Bush*, 1995] November, [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] February.

Professor Donald MacLeod, of the Free Church of Scotland was charged with 6 indecent assaults on 5 women. These assaults could rightly be described as ecumenical fruit [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] January.

Priest Edward Kilpatrick, 51, was charged with 19 offences of indecency against 2 boys. Priest John Dyer, 55, the headmaster St. John’s College, Hampshire, was accused of sexually abusing 6 boys between 1985 and 1994 [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] February.

Priest Joseph Steele, 55, received 11 charges of indecent assault against 3 girls and 2 boys, committed between 1969-1983 [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] March...

Priest Bernard Green, 43, teacher, a housemaster at Ampleforth College, was charged with indecent assault on 13 year old boy [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] June.

Sinn Feiners, Martin McGuinness and Mitchel McLaughlin gave their support for a sodomite “Gay Pride Festival” in Londonderry [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] July/August.

Scottish Roman Catholic Bishop Roderick Wright, 56, was found to be the father of an illegitimate son and priest Dermot O’Gorman the father of two illegitimate children, [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] October.

Priest Adrian McLeish, 45, of Newcastle was found guilty of 12 charges of indecent assault against 4 boys, aged 10, 10, 12, 18 and gaoled for 6 years [*The Burning Bush*, 1996] December.

Priest Brendan Smythe, was sentenced on 25/7/97 to a further 12 years gaol for a total of 74 charges of indecency, committed over a period of 40 years. He died on 22/8/97. 5 “Christian” brothers from St. Joseph’s Industrial School, Lower Salthill, Galway were charged with 51 indecent assaults, alleged to have been committed between 1959-1991. Priest Conelius Sagmeister was found to be the father of 3 children by different women, in Traboch, Austria [*The Burning Bush*, 1997] September.

Richard Harris, the Bishop of Oxford, stated that he supports lowering the age of sodomite consent from 18 to 16. David Wharton, Bishop of Newcastle, claimed that *homosexuality within a loving permanent relationship is no sin* and John Austin Baker, former Bishop of Salisbury advocated that practising sodomites should be allowed to marry. Lord Runcie admitted that he had knowingly ordained practising sodomites to the Anglican priesthood and the *Daily Mail*, 27/11/97, reported Dr.

George Carey as saying sodomite couples could make better parents than married couples. Rev. Foster's comment is apposite. *Any true child of God still within the Church of England cannot possibly linger any longer within this evil denomination. It grows ever more corrupt every day and is abandoned of God and must be forsaken by those who have any regard for the commands and honour of God* [*The Burning Bush*, 1997] December. The Church of England has reaped more ecumenical fruit and is becoming a modern Sodom. It may well be time for genuine believers within the denomination to emulate their 16<sup>th</sup> century forbears and form a breakaway Church.

**“Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you”** 2 Corinthians 6:17.

Priest Martin Greaney, 56, was convicted in the Irish Republic on 13 charges of indecent assaults on 8 young girls, aged 10-14 and gaoled for 7 years. Priest John Brosnan, 48, was sentenced to 4 years gaol for 13 charges of sexual abuse against children, 4 girls and a boy, committed between 1977-1985. Since 1980, 23 Catholic clergy have been convicted in Ireland on sex abuse charges, 15 in the Republic and 8 in the North. 15 cases are pending, of which 2 are in the North [*The Burning Bush*, 1997] December.

Rev. Foster has **“plentifully declared the thing as it is”** Job 26:3, in his description of several contemporary icons. The late Princess Diana was a woman of *indecent dress and adulterous behaviour*. William Hague MP, was only *recently married after openly living in sin with the woman who is now his wife*. Mr. Hague appears to have also avoided the issue of cohabitation in his Wilberforce address of 16<sup>th</sup> November 1998 [*Christian Voice*, January 1999]. Robin Cook, MP, was *openly parading his mistress at government functions*. Bill Clinton was rightly described as *an habitual whore-monger* and the son of anti-drugs Home Secretary Jack Straw, *has been deemed guilty of drug peddling* [*The Burning Bush*, 1998] February. These are timely reminders.

Displaying more ecumenical fruit, Dr. Lindsay Brown, 57, an Irish Presbyterian and vice principal of Bangor Grammar School, was convicted of 11 charges of indecency against boys 11-12. Priest John Lloyd, 57, was gaoled for 21 months for an attack on a 13 year old girl in 1974 [*The Burning Bush*, 1998] March.

Occasionally the Vatican appears to display traces of conscience over the various revelations about the evil that it condones. For example, the Vatican issued an *“apology”* for the Nazi holocaust of the Second World War. The document is said to have ignored the persecution of the Jews, evaded the silence of Roman Catholic leaders during the Holocaust and to have sought to exonerate Pius XII from any blame. Lord Janner of Braunstone, chairman of the Holocaust Education Trust rejected it as *totally inadequate*. However, Rome's apology for the holocaust is as hollow as her professed willingness to correct the behaviour of her perverted priests. Rev. Foster stated *That Rome was deeply involved with Hitler's Nazis cannot be denied. Her bishops blessed the soldiers of the Third Reich on many occasions...the Roman Catholic Church allied itself openly with the fascist leadership and supported the massacre of Serbian Orthodox Church members who refused to convert to Rome. What passes for repentance is but a strategic realignment of her public stance and redefinition of her attitudes that signify nothing. It is but a retouching of the paint on the whore's face, where her wickedness had become visible to the discerning* [*The Burning Bush*, 1998] April.

On a more positive note, traditionally minded Anglican bishops from Africa accused Western bishops of betraying the Bible on sexuality at the Lambeth Conference. Delegates voted 526 to 70 with 45 abstentions in support of a resolution that *sodomy is incompatible with Scripture*. Pro-sodomite Bishop Holloway of Edinburgh stated *It is very difficult to be a lesbian and gay Christian. It takes enormous courage*. Once again, Rev. Foster's comment is apposite. *We have to say to Bishop Holloway that it is not merely difficult to be a sodomite and a Christian, it is impossible. Sodomy is an abomination, anathematised by God and condemned by His Word. No one can claim to love the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour and yet walk in darkness and such abominable defiance of His law, 1 John 1:6* [*The Burning Bush*, 1998] September.



Focusing on two more contemporary icons, Rev. Foster rightly described the relationship between Camilla Parker Bowles and Prince Charles as *an affront to decency. He and Camilla Parker Bowles have continued in an adulterous relationship during her marriage, which has now ended, and his marriage to the late Diana, Princess of Wales. The liaison was one of the worst kept secrets of Royalty.* Clearly, the Prince's associations with Rome and the New Age Movement have not helped to improve his personal conduct. In the meantime, the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Cardiff, John Ward, 70, was arrested on 26<sup>th</sup> January 1999 for the rape of 6 year old girl in London, nearly 40 years ago, [[The Burning Bush, 1999](#)] February.

**“Behold, ye have sinned against the Lord: and be sure your sin will find you out”** Numbers 32:23...

...the **“abominations and filthiness of...THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS”**, Revelation 17:4, 5 continues...

Catholic bishop Robert Sanchez, former Archbishop of Santa Fe, New Mexico, was found to have been sexually involved with 20 young women. He had concealed hundreds of cases of young boys abused by priests in his archdiocese and was forced to resign in 1993 after an investigation into the abuses. One lawyer dealt with 47 cases, others had filed 40 cases, while church authorities and victims were dealing with yet another 40 cases [[The Stand, Vol. VII, No. 1, December /January 1996/97](#)] p 36-37.

Priest James Channing-Pearce, 57, was gaoled for 5 years for indecent assaults on pupils aged 12-16 at Stonyhurst College between 1987-1995 [[The Stand, Vol. VIII, No. 2, February/March 1998](#)] p 24.

*A California jury on Thursday ordered the Roman Catholic diocese in Stockton to pay \$US30 million to two young men who endured years of sexual abuse by a Catholic priest. Jon Howard, 19, along with his brother John, 23, charged Father Oliver O’Grady (should be Oliver Degrady - Dr. Lloyd) with repeatedly molesting them. O’Grady, who admitted molesting the boys in a 1993 criminal trial, is serving a 14 year prison term* [[The Stand, Vol. VIII, No. 6, October/November 1998](#)] p 30, citing the New Zealand Herald, 18/7/98.

*The full horror of how British child migrants suffered at the hands of paedophile priests in Australia emerged last week. Children transported in the 1960s endured years of depravity at the hands of the Christian Brothers who abused them in the name of God. In a harrowing report into the scandal of child migration, the Commons Health Committee highlighted the alleged abuse suffered by boys and girls sent to Catholic institutions in the 20 years [after] 1947. Referring to one specific home, the report said: “Some of what was done there was of a quite exceptional depravity, so that terms like sexual depravity are too weak to convey it.” The plight of up to 10,000 youngsters who were sent from children’s homes to Australia and New Zealand has received “shamefully little attention,” (guess why? - Dr. Lloyd) the MPs said. The report found that most former child migrants seemed to have been subjected to considerable hardship and singled out Catholic homes run by the Christian Brothers and the Sisters of Mercy in Australia as particularly brutal. The Christian Brothers have publicly apologized for the abuse that took place in their homes, (they certainly cannot deny it - Dr. Lloyd) but the MPs said that there was ‘more to learn’ about what went on. The Brothers were also criticised for using ‘every legal avenue’ to block court action by abuse victims (YOU BET THEY DID! - Dr. Lloyd) [[The Stand, Vol. VIII, No. 6, October/November 1998](#)] p 25-29, citing Roland Wayson, Associate Political Editor, *International Express*.*

According to the BBC news, [[news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/wales/1312603.stm](http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/wales/1312603.stm) and related articles– 2015 update, he got the sentence cut on appeal], Cardiff Crown Court sentenced 42 – year – old Father Joe Jordan to eight years gaol in September 2000 for a series of sexual assaults on young boys. The assaults took place between 1987 and 1989, during which Jordan was retained as a priest despite concern over his activities.

Following Jordan’s trial, there was a call for the Archbishop of Cardiff, Most Rev John Aloysius Ward, to resign by a former South Wales priest, Ambrose Walsh. Ambrose Walsh stepped down as

a canon over the affair and because of the imprisonment of Archbishop Ward's press officer, Father John Lloyd, for paedophile offences in 1998. See comments earlier, with respect to Father Lloyd.

The Catholic Church is now facing a number of compensation claims from individuals abused by priests, the report stated. In the meantime, another Catholic priest, Father Gerard Flahive has been granted "administrative leave" by the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Birmingham, pending the outcome of a police investigation into allegations against Flahive concerning an incident of child sex abuse committed in 1980.

*Fundamental Focus*, Issue No. 5, June-September 2000 reports that "A 71 year-old retired Roman Catholic priest, who committed sex offences against young boys, was jailed for 12 years in April of this year. Father Eugene Greene was sentenced at Donegal Circuit Court after pleading guilty to 40 sample charges involving 26 victims, most of them altar boys, between 1965 and 1982. The cases came to light when Father Greene approached the Gardai complaining that he was being black-mailed. When the accusation was investigated a man told detectives that he had been abused by the priest, and follow-up inquiries uncovered the 25 other victims and incidents dating back over three decades. Judge Matthew Dreary described some of the abuses carried out by Greene as horrific, and said they had caused great pain, trauma and emotional upset. He sentenced the priest to a number of concurrent jail terms and refused him leave to appeal". *Fundamental Focus* may be obtained from Mr. William Kernohan, 180 Ballygarvey Road, Broughshane, Co. Antrim BT43 7HD.

Taken together, these disclosures should come as no surprise...

Surely Rome is "**MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**" Revelation 17:5. Dr. Ruckman has stated [*The History of the New Testament Church, Volume I, Dr. Peter S. Ruckman, Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1982*] that *If the Bible was tough on Rome, Luther was in agreement with it. He graciously addressed Pope Paul III as "Your Hellishness" and again as "Most Hellish Father". Luther's strong suit was his preaching. "The court of Rome is more corrupt than Babylon or Sodom...the most lawless den of thieves, the most shameless of all brothels, the very kingdom of sin, death and hell...so that not even anti-christ if he were to come could devise any addition to its wickedness"*. It may be that in the light of all these disclosures, even Mrs. Bogle might be encouraged to re-evaluate the implications of her stance as *a triumphalist Catholic in Britain today...*

Britain would do well to heed particularly the judgement on Sodom. The prophet Ezekiel foretells God's judgement on the nations in the last time, Ezekiel 39. Verse 6 states in part "**And I will send a fire...among them that dwell carelessly in the isles: and they shall know that I am the Lord.**" Is this how the British Isles must "**understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God**" Proverbs 2:5?

## The 1611 Holy Bible versus sodomite Peter J. Gomes

### Introduction

The late sodomite Rev Peter J. Gomes 1942-2011<sup>8</sup> published a best-selling book in 1996 entitled *The Good Book: Reading the Bible with Mind and Heart*<sup>9</sup>. This book was widely acclaimed and became a best-seller because Peter J. Gomes enjoyed high status. Wikipedia states that he was the Plummer Professor of Christian Morals at [Harvard Divinity School](#) and [Pusey Minister](#) at Harvard's [Memorial Church](#) — in the words of Harvard's president “one of the great preachers of our generation, and a living symbol of courage and conviction.”

It is this writer's conviction that Paul's rebuke to *“Elymas the sorcerer”* Acts 13:8 applies equally to the late Peter J. Gomes.

**“O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?”** Acts 13:10.

This work shows why.

Gomes on pp 149-159 of his book took issue with *“what saith the scripture”* Romans 4:3 about sodomites and their ‘lifestyles.’ He listed several passages of scripture that condemn sodomites and their ‘lifestyles’ and tried to argue that these passages in fact do not condemn sodomites and their ‘lifestyles.’

This work shows that these passages of scripture do in fact condemn sodomites and their ‘lifestyles.’ They in turn therefore condemn sodomite Peter J. Gomes, who, being like those *“men of Sodom...wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly”* Genesis 13:13 having given no indication of ever having *“repented of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed”* 2 Corinthians 12:21 in turning to God for forgiveness and cleansing in that *“the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin”* 1 John 1:7 is now *“cast into hellfire”* Mark 9:47 *“Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched”* Mark 9:44, 46, 48.

This work is of contemporary importance because this nation has sunk so far into *“uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness”* that it has even legalised sodomite ‘marriage’<sup>10</sup> thereby incurring the Lord's condemnation through Isaiah in a passage that Peter J. Gomes failed to list.

**“The shew of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto their soul! for they have rewarded evil unto themselves”** Isaiah 3:9.

They have. God's firestorm will descend Europe-wide.

**“And I will send a fire on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly in the isles: and they shall know that I am the LORD”** Ezekiel 39:6.

Peter J. Gomes knows that now.

### ***Passages of scripture that condemn sodomites and their ‘lifestyles’***

Peter J. Gomes listed the following passages of scripture which he denied condemn sodomites and their ‘lifestyles.’

Genesis 1-2, 19:1-9, Judges 19, Ezekiel 16:46-56, Leviticus 18:22, 20:13, Romans 1:26, 27, 1 Corinthians 6:9, 1 Timothy 1:10

Peter J. Gomes dismissed Genesis 1-2 as an argument from silence, Genesis 19:1-9, Judges 19 as indicative of inhospitality as sin, not sodomy and cited Ezekiel 16:46-56, Matthew 10:14-15, Luke 10:10-12 in support, Leviticus 18:22, 20:13 as mere frontier folklore irrelevant today and Romans 1:26, 27, 1 Corinthians 6:9, 1 Timothy 1:10 as condemnation of idolatry and male whores, not ordinary sodomites.

***“What saith the scripture?” Romans 4:3***

Regardless of Peter J. Gomes’ warped opinions on the above passages, *“what saith the scripture?”* Romans 4:3.

***Genesis 1-2***

The most relevant passages from Genesis 1-2 concerning sodomy and sodomites, though indirectly, are those with respect to God’s creation of man and God’s commission to man in that creation.

***“So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth”*** Genesis 1:27-28.

Genesis 1:27-28 show that what Gomes dismissed as an argument from silence are actually decisive arguments *from scripture* against sodomy and sodomites.

- God blessed ***“male and female”*** not male and male or female and female.
- God commissioned ***“male and female...Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth.”*** Neither male and male nor female and female can obey that commission.
- God subordinated the earth to ***“male and female”*** not male and male or female and female.

Genesis 1:27-28 therefore show that male and male and female and female have no part in God’s creation ***“But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption”*** 2 Peter 2:12 with ***“the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha”*** 2 Peter 2:5 in the context.

***Genesis 19:1-9, Judges 19***

The most relevant passages from Genesis 19:1-9, Judges 19 are those that directly describe the sodomites’ aggression against the visitors and impinge on the inhospitality issue.

***“But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them”*** Genesis 19:4-5.

***“and there is no man that receiveth me to house...So he brought him into his house, and gave provender unto the asses: and they washed their feet, and did eat and drink. Now as they were making their hearts merry, behold, the men of the city, certain sons of Belial, beset the house round about, and beat at the door, and spake to the master of the house, the old man, saying, Bring forth the man that came into thine house, that we may know him”*** Judges 19:18, 21-22.

Gomes attempted to muddy the issue by questioning the meaning of the word ***“know”*** Genesis 19:5, Judges 19:22. The scripture leaves the reader in no doubt about the meaning of ***“know”*** in the contexts of Genesis 19:5, Judges 19:18, 21-22.

***“Behold now, I have two daughters which have not known man; let me, I pray you, bring them out unto you, and do ye to them as is good in your eyes: only unto these men do nothing; for therefore came they under the shadow of my roof”*** Genesis 19:8 with Genesis 19:31-38.

***“Behold, here is my daughter a maiden, and his concubine; them I will bring out now, and humble ye them, and do with them what seemeth good unto you: but unto this man do not so vile a thing. But the men would not hearken to him: so the man took his concubine, and brought her forth unto them; and they knew her, and abused her all the night until the morning: and when the day began to spring, they let her go”*** Judges 19:24-25.



Note that Genesis 19:1-9 do not explicitly address inhospitality, which immediately weakens the pro-sodomite inhospitality explanation for God's judgement on *"the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah"* 2 Peter 2:5.

Note further that God refers to *"the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah"* not the *inhospitality* of Sodom and Gomorrah, which would have been a sin of *omission*, not *commission* and therefore did not come into what God actually says about *"the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah"* 2 Peter 2:5.

**"And the LORD said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know"** Genesis 18:20-21.

Only Judges 19:18 from Genesis 19:1-9, Judges 19 implies inhospitality but the aftermath of Judges 19 shows that the issue was a sin of *commission*, not *omission*, as inhospitality would have been.

**"And we will take ten men of an hundred throughout all the tribes of Israel, and an hundred of a thousand, and a thousand out of ten thousand, to fetch victual for the people, that they may do, when they come to Gibeah of Benjamin, according to all the folly that they have wrought in Israel...And the tribes of Israel sent men through all the tribe of Benjamin, saying, What wickedness is this that is done among you?"** Judges 20:12, 14.

For details on *"the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah"* see *The Cry of Sodom*<sup>11</sup>. Note in particular that the sin of child molestation and the sin of the intended violence of Genesis 19:4, 5 were connected by the abomination of sodomy throughout and therefore God said *"their sin is very grievous"* without any reference to inhospitality. See Matthew 7:17-19 and accompanying remarks below.

Gomes, it should be noted, condemned the intended violence that Genesis 19:4-5, Judges 19:22 describe but insisted that it was separate from ordinary sodomites.

It wasn't. As indicated above, it was simply the end result of abomination *long indulged in*, the corrupt fruit of a corrupt tree *that like Sodom and Gomorrah was therefore to be cut down and burned* as the Lord Jesus Christ Himself explains. *Note that male and male and female and female therefore cannot bring forth anything good in God's sight.*

**"Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire"** Matthew 7:17-19.

### **Ezekiel 16:46-56**

Ezekiel 16:49-50 are the most relevant scriptures from the above passage on sodomy and sodomites and the pro-sodomite inhospitality explanation for God's judgement on *"the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah"* 2 Peter 2:5. However, Ezekiel 16:49-50 show further that *pride* - a term that sodomites have adopted for themselves as Google will immediately show - was foremost in Sodom's iniquity, not inhospitality.

**"Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy. And they were haughty, and committed abomination before me; therefore I took them away as I saw good"** Ezekiel 16:49-50.

Note that Ezekiel 16:46-56 do not mention inhospitality explicitly as part of *"the iniquity of thy sister Sodom."* Gomes crudely and wrongly assumed that the passage does. Note too in passing that if anyone in the Old Testament could have used hospitality, it was Jonah in Nineveh, Jonah 3, yet no one gave Jonah hospitality even after the inhabitants of the city repented and got right with God. Inhospitality therefore wasn't the driving force for God's impending judgement on Nineveh. God's judgement on Sodom and Gomorrah was no different in that respect.

Ezekiel 16:50 - that Gomes did not explicitly refer to - explains directly why God punished Sodom. In their 'gay pride,' see remarks above, **"they were haughty, and committed abomination before me: therefore I took them away as I saw good."**

Note that the abomination was a sin of *commission*, not *omission*, such as inhospitality would be.

Ezekiel 16:49-50 therefore show distinct degeneration in Sodom and Gomorrah from sins of pride, indolence and indulgence to the *committal* of abomination that in turn brought down God's judgement. Note again that *committal* is *doing*, just as with Noah's younger son Ham, concerning Ham's act of sodomy that brought down God's judgement on Ham's descendants, God already having blessed Ham himself, Genesis 9:1. Ham's descendants of course *included* the late Peter J. Gomes.

**"And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without...And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him, And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren"** Genesis 9:24-25.

Ham's sin remained with his descendants. *The original sodomites were Hamites.*

**"And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. These are the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations"** Genesis 10:19-20.

Leviticus 18:22, 20:13 to which Gomes alluded explain further how *committal* of abomination is the *doing* of abomination, what that abomination is and why, in context, Gomes' appeal to frontier folklore is futile. See remarks below.

Concerning the Lord Jesus Christ and Matthew 10:14-15, Luke 10:10-12, Gomes lied about the Lord Jesus Christ, implying that the Lord thought inhospitality was what brought down God's judgement on **"the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah"** 2 Peter 2:5. These scriptures are as follows *in context*.

**"But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand...And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city"** Matthew 10:6-7, 14-15.

**"After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come...But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city...He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me"** Luke 10:1, 10-12, 16.

It is very apparent that the Lord is referring in Matthew 10:14-15, Luke 10:10-12 *in context* to the sins of rejecting His words, rejecting the heralding of **"the kingdom of heaven"** and rejecting **"the gospel of the kingdom of God"** Mark 1:14 *with His coming* as greater sins than Sodom's abominations. Inhospitality is only incidental in the contexts of Matthew 10:14-15, Luke 10:10-12.

Gomes missed the fact that in the chapter from Luke immediately preceding the one to which he referred, the Lord *forbade* retribution on the Samaritans for their inhospitality toward Him, weakening the pro-sodomite inhospitality explanation for God's judgement on Sodom to the status of **"this girdle, which is good for nothing"** Jeremiah 13:10.



*“And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, And sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them. And they went to another village” Luke 9:51-56.*

### *Leviticus 18:22, 20:13*

These are the frontier folklore passages that according to Gomes applied only to Israel in a transitional phase while it set itself up as a nation.

*“Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination...If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them”* Leviticus 18:22, 20:13.

Gomes acknowledged that these passages accurately describe sodomite activity but maintained that they don’t apply to any settled nation. Gomes lied in that respect. Leviticus 18:22, 20:13 apply *throughout* Israel’s national life and in like manner sodomite abomination is abominable throughout any nation’s life as the contexts of Leviticus 18:22, 20:13 show.

*“And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, I am the LORD your God. After the doings of the land of Egypt, wherein ye dwelt, shall ye not do; and after the doings of the land of Canaan, whither I bring you, shall ye not do; neither shall ye walk in their ordinances. Ye shall do my judgments, and keep mine ordinances, to walk therein: I am the LORD your God”* Leviticus 18:1-4.

*“(For all these abominations have the men of the land done, which were before you, and the land is defiled;)...And ye shall not walk in the manners of the nation, which I cast out before you: for they committed all these things, and therefore I abhorred them”* Leviticus 18:27, 20:23.

### *Romans 1:26, 27, 1 Corinthians 6:9, 1 Timothy 1:10*

These passages apply only to idolatry and male whores according to Gomes. Gomes lied again. The passages are as follows.

*“For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet”* Romans 1:26-27.

*“Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind”* 1 Corinthians 6:9.

*“For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine”* 1 Timothy 1:10.

Note first that the context of Romans 1:26-27 is *uncleanness between any same-gender individuals that is bodily, not just whores.*

*“Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves”* Romans 1:24.

Paul refers to idolatry and whoredom or harlotry 1 Corinthians 6:9, 15-16 *in addition to, not all-encompassing of* “uncleanness...lusts...to dishonour their own bodies between themselves...vile affections...that which is against nature...that which is unseemly,” “abusers of themselves with mankind,” “them that defile themselves with mankind.” Those terms refer *unequivocally* to that which is filthy, physical, intimate, dishonouring bodily, unnatural and voluntary between individuals of the same gender. Gomes missed all that.

Anyone who cannot discern from those terms the abominations of Sodom and Gomorrah as Leviticus 18:22, 20:13 describe them and as persisted in Israel as a *settled* nation, see below, is as Paul declares “***But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant***” 1 Corinthians 14:38.

This is the reality of Sodom and Gomorrah that God hates *now* as *then*. Note *God’s* reaction and what *God* approved of:

**“And there were also sodomites in the land: and they did according to all the abominations of the nations which the LORD cast out before the children of Israel”** 1 Kings 14:24.

**“And Asa did that which was right in the eyes of the LORD, as did David his father. And he took away the sodomites out of the land, and removed all the idols that his fathers had made”** 1 Kings 15:11-12.

## ***2 Peter 6-8, Jude 7***

Peter’s and Jude’s summaries of Sodom and Gomorrah show further that neither inhospitality nor intended violence were the reasons for God’s judgement on Sodom and Gomorrah *but daily abomination that was filthy and fornicating with strange flesh*. Gomes failed to list these scriptures.

**“And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)”** 2 Peter 2:6-8.

**“Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire”** Jude 7.

See the informative tract *Sin City*<sup>12</sup> for the reality of Sodom and Gomorrah *then and now*. The tract includes the above scriptural counter to the pro-sodomite inhospitality smokescreen.

## ***Conclusion***

**“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter...”** Ecclesiastes 12:13. The scripture has shown that Paul’s rebuke to “*Elymas the sorcerer*” Acts 13:8 applies equally to the late Peter J. Gomes.

**“O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?”** Acts 13:10. See ***Introduction***.

God’s final judgement on Peter J. Gomes and all those of his sodomite persuasion is as follows.

**“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death”** Revelation 21:8.

## AV1611 Advanced Revelations

### Introduction

Dr Ruckman<sup>13</sup> refers to what he terms advanced revelations in the AV1611, passages that yield information not found in the modern versions e.g. 1984 NIV, 2011 NIV, NKJV. See the following:

### *Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 and modern feminism or feminazism*

Much criticism of supposed archaic words in the AV1611 is aimed at the personal pronouns *“thee,” “thou”* etc. However, these supposedly archaic forms enable the reader to distinguish between the second person singular (‘thee’) and the second person plural (‘you’), a distinction lost in modern English. This distinction in the AV1611 in Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 yields a startling advanced revelation about the rise of modern feminism or feminazism that is concealed by the modern versions that replaced *“thee”* and *“thou”* with *“you.”* Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3 read as follows.

*“And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.”*

*“Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.”*

*“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.”*

God used the singular *“thou”* when speaking to Adam in Genesis 2:16-17 and He did not update it in scripture to the plural *“Ye”* after Adam received his wife because they were *“one flesh.”*

The Devil, a *positive* thinker who questioned *first of all* what God *said* i.e. God’s *words*, not truths, message, principles, fundamentals or composite ‘Word,’ drove a wedge between Adam and his wife by using the plural *“Ye”* by which *“the woman being deceived was in the transgression”* 1 Timothy 2:14 in that she wrongly replied with the plural *“We”* and *“ye.”* That simple but wrong reply indicated a willingness on the part of the woman to be independent of her husband that the Devil successfully exploited to the ruin of men such that by the time of Genesis 6:11 *“The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.”* As indicated, the woman’s reply depicting herself as separate from her husband has in it, additionally to the pending Fall, the seeds of the modern feminazi movement that is especially destructive to marriage, home, church and family.

See [www.jesus-is-savior.com/Womens%20Page/militant\\_feminazi.htm](http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Womens%20Page/militant_feminazi.htm).

Eve, Genesis 3:20, could have replied *“No! God said ‘thou shalt not eat of it’ because Adam and me are “one flesh.” Take a hike, Lucifer [Isaiah 14:12]!”* Such a definitive reply would have saved a lot of grief over the last six millennia but its potential is obscured in the modern versions, which itself provides further insight into who is behind them, given the identity of Eve’s deceiver.

### *Numbers 33:52 and “pictures”*

Numbers 33:52 reads *“Then ye shall drive out all the inhabitants of the land from before you, and destroy all their pictures, and destroy all their molten images, and quite pluck down all their high places:”*

Dr Ruckman<sup>14</sup> notes that Numbers 33:52 in the AV1611 is an advanced revelation that warns against the destructive influence of television, which consists in effect of *images “poutrayed upon the wall round about.”* Such images fuel *“wicked abominations”* hatched by men *“in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery”* leading to *“greater abominations”* where men turn their backs on the Lord in false worship e.g. in that *“they worshipped the sun toward the east”* Ezekiel 8:9, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16. The Lord warns of the eyes turning to ungodly imagery i.e. the *televised “wicked thing”* Psalm 101:3. *“But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!”* The modern versions change the word *“pictures”* and obscure both the advanced revelation and the Lord’s warning against television.

### ***Psalm 74:8 and “synagogues”***

Psalm 74:8 reads ***“They said in their hearts, Let us destroy them together: they have burned up all the synagogues of God in the land.”***

Dr Ruckman notes that Psalm 74:8 in the AV1611 is an advanced revelation that warns of the persecution of Jews in the Tribulation when they are forced to flee as in Lamentations 4:19 ***“Our persecutors are swifter than the eagles of the heaven: they pursued us upon the mountains, they laid wait for us in the wilderness.”*** The modern versions change the word ***“synagogues,”*** obscuring revelation that warns Jews of fast approaching ***“perilous times”*** of ***“the last days”*** 2 Timothy 3:1.

### ***Isaiah 3:20 and “tablets”***

Another advanced revelation from the AV1611 shows that it is up to date with modern technology.

See [www.amazon.com/gp/feature.html?ie=UTF8&docId=1000949991](http://www.amazon.com/gp/feature.html?ie=UTF8&docId=1000949991):



[HP TouchPad Wi-Fi 16 GB 9.7-Inch Tablet Computer](#)  
by [HP](#)

★★★★☆ (1,131 customer reviews)

In Stock.

Sold by [Tailwind International](#)  
and [Fulfilled by Amazon.](#)

List Price: \$499.99

Price: **\$278.99**

You Save: \$221.00 (44%)

A 7-inch tablet device can be hand-held and such devices are popular today. What’s especially interesting is that in scripture, ***“tablets”*** are associated with ***“jewels of gold”*** Exodus 35:22, Numbers 31:50. Dr Ruckman refers to gold layering in strips for electronic devices with respect to Exodus 39:3. In Isaiah 3:18, 20, the AV1611 has ***“In that day the Lord will take away...the bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings.”*** The Lord is here taking ungodly young women to task and spanning the generations. Bonnets, though still worn, were much more in vogue in the 19<sup>th</sup> century but tablets, though polished jewels set in gold in Isaiah’s day are now hand-held electronic devices like ipods and very likely have gold in their circuitry.

That is clearly an AV1611 advanced revelation for today’s technology especially for ungodly young women ***“mad upon their idols”*** Jeremiah 50:38 including not only their finery but also their mobiles, ipods and ***“tablets.”*** The modern versions change the word ***“tablets,”*** obscuring this revelation.

### ***Acts 19:37 and “churches”***

Acts 19:37 reads ***“For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.”***

Dr Ruckman states that the AV1611’s use of the word ***“churches”*** points to the worship of a ***“goddess”*** in this age by those who would profess to be Christians. Note that by implication of the word ***“robbers,”*** their church is wealthy by comparison with other churches. Acts 19:37 therefore points to Rome and Catholicism. See Revelation 17:1-5. The modern versions have ***“temples”*** instead of ***“churches”*** and thereby obscure the advanced revelation that warns of Catholicism.

### ***1 Corinthians 15:33 and “evil communications”***

1 Corinthians 15:33 reads ***“Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners”*** i.e. ***“manner of life”*** Acts 26:4, 2 Timothy 3:10 and is another warning against television. See remarks on Numbers 33:52. The modern versions change the word ***“communications”*** and obscure this warning. In sum, the modern versions obscure advanced revelation in Genesis 2:16-17, 24, 3:1-3, Numbers 33:52, Psalm 74:8, Isaiah 3:20, Acts 19:37, 1 Corinthians 15:33, a sure indictment of their overseer ***“the serpent...more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made”*** Genesis 3:1. Only the AV1611 is God’s words because only the AV1611 fulfils Psalm 33:11.

***“The counsel of the LORD standeth for ever, the thoughts of his heart to all generations.”***



## The KJB King James Bible, Britain and Islam

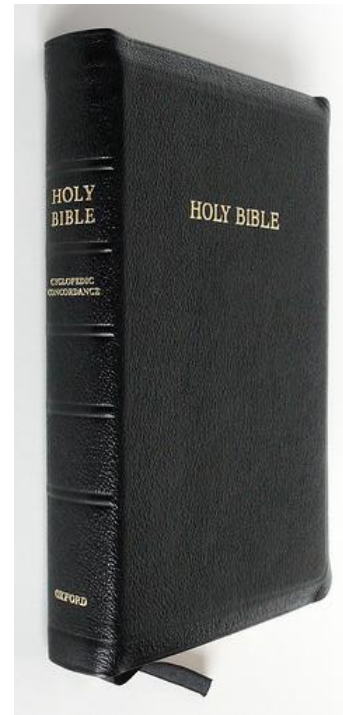
See [Royal Law – James 2:8](#)<sup>15</sup>



Royal Coat of Arms



Crown Jewels



King James Bible

### [Introduction – Royal Coat of Arms, Crown Jewels, KJB](#)

Wikipedia acknowledges that, emphases in article, “*The **Royal coat of arms of the United Kingdom**<sup>16</sup> is the official [coat of arms](#) of the [British monarch](#), currently [Queen Elizabeth II](#). These arms are used by the Queen in her official capacity as monarch of the [United Kingdom](#), and are officially known as her **Arms of Dominion**. Variants of the Royal Arms are used by other members of the [Royal Family](#); and by the [British government](#) in connection with the administration and government of the country...*”

Note also Article XXXVII of The Church of England<sup>17</sup>.

*“The Queen’s Majesty hath the chief power in this realm of England and other her dominions, unto whom the chief government of all estates of this realm, whether they be ecclesiastical or civil, in all causes doth appertain, and is not nor ought to be subject to any foreign jurisdiction...”*

In sum, sources both secular and ecclesiastical acknowledge that the true and supreme governance of Britain and the Old Dominions is vested in “*The Queen’s Majesty*,” which the Royal Coat of Arms emblemizes. The above figures show that the Crown jewels<sup>18</sup> of Britain and the Old Dominions are at the very summit of the Royal Coat of Arms and the pinnacle of the Crown jewels is an empty cross, signifying the risen Lord Jesus Christ. **“He is not here: for he is risen, as he said”** Matthew 28:6. Britain and the Old Dominions are therefore *officially via “The Queen’s Majesty”* under the Rulership of the Lord Jesus Christ according to Isaiah 9:6 **“unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.”** Yet **“The mighty God”** the Lord Jesus Christ has submitted Himself to **“the words of the LORD”** Psalm 12:6 **“for thou hast magnified thy word above all thy name”** Psalm 138:2. The highest authority for the governance of Britain and the Old Dominions is therefore the 1611 Authorized King James Bible<sup>19</sup> **“the royal law”** James 2:8, *also above “any foreign jurisdiction.”* See figures above and link.



## Islam the Intruder

What then of Islam in Britain and the Old Dominions? Put simply, Islam is an intruder into *“this realm of England and other her dominions.”* This may be shown with respect to the most distinct features of Islam; the Qur’an, Jihad and Sharia Law. They are all in direct conflict with the 1611 Authorized King James Bible *“the royal law”* James 2:8.

### KJB King James Bible versus Qur’anic Blasphemy

The KJB calls the Lord Jesus Christ *“The mighty God”* Isaiah 9:6. His name<sup>20</sup> given singly 4 times in *“the old testament”* 2 Corinthians 3:14 is *“JEHOVAH”* Exodus 6:3, Psalm 83:18, Isaiah 12:2, 26:4. It is *“JESUS”* Matthew 1:23 in *“the new testament”* 2 Corinthians 3:6, which means *Jehovah* saves. By contrast *Allah* simply means *the god*. Though not a graven image, Allah is like one in that his followers *“pray unto a god that cannot save”* Isaiah 45:20, whereas the Lord Jesus Christ as JEHOVAH states unequivocally *“...there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else”* Isaiah 45:21-22\*. The place to look is *“the place, which is called Calvary”* Luke 23:33 because *“there they crucified him”* but the cross, as the Royal Coat of Arms and the Crown jewels show, is now empty and for all who are willing to receive that testimony *“the Father...hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins”* Colossians 1:12, 13-14. \*See also John 14:6.

Paul therefore states of the Lord Jesus Christ that *“...being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father”* Philippians 2:8-11.



That includes every Allah-adherent Muslim who ever existed.

The anti-papal protesters<sup>21</sup> were therefore seriously wrong about the Lord Jesus Christ, each one *“a fool in his folly”* Proverbs 17:12 who will suffer for it *“...for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain”* Exodus 20:7, Deuteronomy 5:11.

One important reason for that Islamic folly is that the Qur’an never acknowledges God’s exaltation of the Lord Jesus Christ as Paul does in Philippians 2:8-11. For that reason alone, the Qur’an is a blasphemy. However, that is not all.

The KJB calls the Lord Jesus Christ *“God...manifest in the flesh”* 1 Timothy 3:16, God’s *“only begotten Son”* 4 times, John 1:18, 3:16, 18, 1 John 4:9 as *“my beloved Son”* 5 times, Mark 1:11, 9:7, Luke 3:22, 9:35, 2 Peter 1:17 and *unequivocally* declares the Lord Jesus Christ to be *“the Son of God”* 34 times; Daniel 3:25 as an Old Testament appearance, Micah 5:2, Matthew 14:33, 27:54, Mark 1:1, 15:39, Luke 1:35, 4:41, 22:70, John 1:34, 49, 5:25, 9:35, 10:36, 11:4, 27, 20:31, Acts 8:37, 9:20, Romans 1:4, 2 Corinthians 1:19, Galatians 2:20, Ephesians 4:13, Hebrews 4:14, 6:6, 7:3, 10:29, 1 John 3:8, 4:15, 5:5, 10, 12, 13, 20, Revelation 2:18; in total at least 44 KJB witnesses to the Lord Jesus Christ as God’s Son, *“the only begotten of the Father”* 1 John 5:18, *not of dust as Adam*, Genesis 3:19.

By contrast, the Qur'an blasphemously denies that the Lord Jesus Christ is **"the Son of God"** **"the only begotten of the Father"** in at least 28 passages. Sura 3:59, Yusuf Ali's translation, is typical.

*"The similitude of Jesus before Allah is as that of Adam; He created him from dust, then said to him: "Be." And he was."*

Yusuf Ali's notes insist that this verse proves that Jesus was only a man, not God or the only begotten Son of God. Additional passages in the Qur'an that deny that the Lord Jesus Christ is the only begotten Son of God include Sura 4:171, 5:17, 72, 73, 75, 116, 9:30, 31, 10:68, 18:4, 5, 19:35, 88-89, 92, 93, 21:26, 23:50, 91, 92, 25:2, 33:7, 37:152, 39:4, 43:59, 81-82, 72:3, 112:3; 28 in all. These passages also deny that God can have *any* son, denying that a New Testament Christian or son of God by adoption can exist, again contradicting Paul and showing further that the Qur'an is a blasphemy, indeed the ultimate blasphemy.

**"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father"** Romans 8:14-15.

### ***KJB King James Bible versus Jihadic Terror***

The KJB is clear with respect to the Christian's attitude to disbelievers.

**"And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will"** 2 Timothy 2:24-26.



The Islamic approach to disbelievers is diametrically different from the KJB approach.

Peter Hammond<sup>22</sup>, veteran missionary to the Sudan, explains that Islam perceives every non-Muslim country to be part of *Dar-al-Harb*, the House of War such that it has to be forcibly absorbed into *Dar-al-Islam*, the House of Islam. The tactics of force can include subversion and they all come under the heading of *Jihad*, the subjugation and forcible conversion of all non-Muslims to Islam. Hammond reveals that the Qur'an contains 109 verses advocating *Jihad*, which exists in several forms, ranging from the subtle to the savage.



Nigerian Christian G.J.O. Moshay<sup>23</sup> describes the tactics of *Jihad* that Mohammed devised in the 7<sup>th</sup> century, aimed at overthrowing Christianity.

*"Migrate to Christian areas because they are tolerant. Pretend to be peaceful, friendly and hospitable; begin to clamour for religious political and social rights and privileges that you will not allow to Christians in an Islamic country; breed fast there and settle down; there should be no Christian activities in your community; you may speak or write to discredit their religion, but they must not talk about Islam; begin to expand your community; Christian activities should be restricted in all the places you expand to; the moment you have enough military might against these 'disbelievers', these trinitarian kaferis, go ahead and eliminate them or suppress them as much as you can, and be in control."*

Moshay concludes “Where immediate invasion is not possible, that has always been the policy.”

Islam’s tactics are succeeding in the UK. Moshay writes “In 1945, only one mosque was to be found in the whole of England. In 1990 over 1,000 mosques are scattered all over the country.” That figure has risen to 1700 in 2007, with an estimated 3-5 million Muslims resident in the UK<sup>24</sup>. Jihad in Britain is also succeeding, becoming militantly aggressive and murderously violent as the figures show that depict the Muslim backlash in London in February 2006 over the Danish cartoons<sup>25</sup> and the July 7<sup>th</sup> 2005 Muslim terrorist murders<sup>26</sup> that left 52 victims dead and 700 injured, many seriously.

Though just two examples of Jihadic terror – Hammond and Moshay cite many more - they show the true nature of Islam toward disbelievers i.e. beat them into submission; “...fight and slay the Pagans wherever ye find them, an seize them, beleaguer them, and lie in wait for them in every stratagem (of war)...” Sura 9:5, Yusuf Ali’s translation.

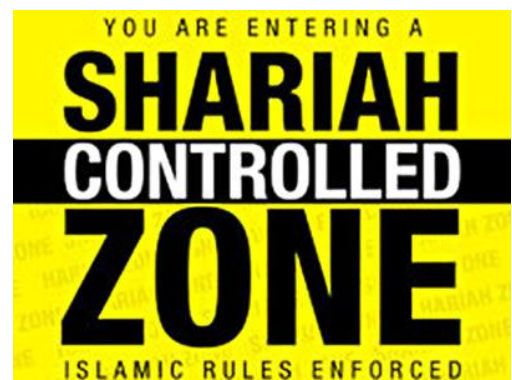
That is the opposite of the KJB in 2 Timothy 2:24-26 i.e. encourage them “**to...repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ**” Acts 20:21.

Hammond and Moshay’s analyses show that so-called extremist, militant or radical Muslims don’t exist. Only two kinds of Muslims exist; those that believe the Qur’an and those that don’t. It is not rocket science to determine which kind will implement *Dar-al-Harb*.

### ***KJB King James Bible versus Sharia Sedition***

Barnabas Fund<sup>27</sup> reported on 21 July 2011 that an Islamist group was piloting a “sharia-controlled zone.”

The report stated that ***Muslims Against Crusades*** are targeting the London borough of Waltham Forest to be the first “sharia-controlled zone” as part of a new “***Islamic Emirates Project***.” According to the report, the message that the figure depicts is being distributed in certain Muslim enclaves and the ***Muslims Against Crusades*** group is calling upon Muslims in Britain to create enclaves in major cities where sharia will one day be implemented. The group said “As part of our *Islamic Emirate Project*, *Waltham Forest is to be the first borough to be targeted for an intense sharia led campaign, introducing the prospect of Islamic law for the Muslim community to abide by. Waltham Forest is...a borough with a marked Islamic fingerprint; Muslim businesses, mosques and Islamic schools emblazon its streets, making a transition into a thriving Islamic emirate, very real and plausible.*”



The report states that the organisation intends to persuade Muslims in Waltham to self-enforce sharia initially with specially designed leaflets and posters that read, “You are entering a Sharia Controlled Zone – Islamic Rules Enforced.”

Britain, totally unconstitutionally, now has 85 sharia courts<sup>28</sup>.

The KJB makes clear that the above project and all related aspirations are seditious and totally contrary to “***the royal law***” James 2:8. The ***Muslims Against Crusades*** group and all who support them are in conflict with “***the higher powers***” of this realm and the Offended Party will no doubt Himself damn the offenders if the human proper authorities do not.

**“Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation”** Romans 13:1-2.



## ***KJB King James Bible Verdict on Islam – and all Haters of the Realm***

Paul describes Islam perfectly in Romans 3:13-18:

***“Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: (pretending to be peace-loving when small in number)***

***“Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: (against non-Muslims)***

***“Their feet are swift to shed blood: (Jihad)***

***“Destruction and misery are in their ways: (Jihad)***

***“And the way of peace have they not known: (Moshay reveals that Islam doesn’t mean ‘peace,’ or ‘submission’ as such, it means total subjugation of disbelievers by violence)***

***“There is no fear of God before their eyes” (see KJB versus Qur’anic Blasphemy).***

Centuries ago, God’s servant Nehemiah said to the enemies of his nation ***“...ye have no portion, nor right, nor memorial, in Jerusalem”*** Nehemiah 2:20. The same is true of Islam in Britain and the Old Dominions according to ***“the royal law”*** James 2:8. In the national context ***“Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person”*** 1 Corinthians 5:13. Finally, for all who hate this realm that has *constitutionally* pledged allegiance to ***“the royal law”*** and the Risen Christ as shown by the Royal Coat of Arms:



Whether they be papist<sup>29</sup>, blasphemously keeping the Lord Jesus Christ nailed to the cross, Nazi-Neo-Nazi<sup>30</sup>, like the EU 4<sup>th</sup> Reich<sup>31</sup>, Marxist<sup>32</sup>, as those who subverted South Africa<sup>33</sup> or Muslim<sup>34</sup>, intent on subverting this realm, as shown, or sodomite<sup>35</sup> who want Her Majesty to support them<sup>36</sup>, the Offended Party will execute perfect judgement at the Second Advent:



***“And from the wicked their light is withholden, and the high arm shall be broken”***

Job 38:15

***“Hear the word of the LORD, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah...If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it”*** Isaiah 1:10, 19-20

## Propitiation

Based on *Reply to DiVietro's Attack on Gail Riplinger – Flotsam Flush* pp 108-109  
[www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php)

### ***“Propitiation” from the Scriptures***

Concerning the word propitiate, or the related Biblical term **“propitiation”** Romans 3:25, 1 John 2:2, 4:10, again ‘the Greek’ isn’t necessary to determine the meaning of the word.

Following Dr Mrs Riplinger’s approach<sup>37</sup>, the word **“propitiation”** is understood from scripture as follows.

Romans 3:24-25 ***“Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;”***

1 John 2:1-2 ***“Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.”***

1 John 4:10 ***“Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.”***

### ***Propitiation is a Person***

**“Propitiation,”** like salvation, Luke 2:30, 19:9, is above all a Person<sup>38</sup>, **“Jesus Christ the righteous.”** God is a personal God, not simply a theological or doctrinal God.

Dr DiVietro gives no indication of any lexicon that reveals this basic meaning of the word **“propitiation.”**

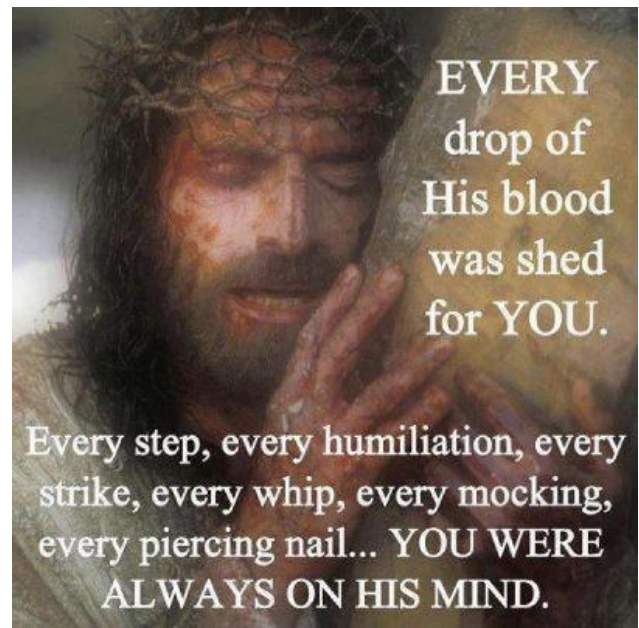
The scripture, however, gives further insight into this meaning.

1 John 4:14 states ***“And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.”***

In sum, **“The Saviour”** and **“the propitiation”** are one and the same. He is **“Jesus Christ the righteous”** or **“Jehovah is salvation”**<sup>39</sup> Matthew 1:21, Who is **“the Messiah the Prince”** Daniel 9:25 and **“the Holy One”** 1 John 2:20, anointed of the Holy Ghost Luke 3:22, 4:18.

The word **“propitiation”** may be understood in more detail by a study of what the Lord Jesus Christ did as **“the Saviour of the world.”**

As such, He is **“the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world”** John 1:29.



***“But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed”*** Isaiah 53:5  
[jesuswords.tumblr.com/](http://jesuswords.tumblr.com/)



### **Propitiation is “Christ our Passover”**

Therefore, as Paul states in 1 Corinthians 5:7 **“For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us.”**

Ephesians 5:2, Hebrews 7:26-27, 9:26, 1 Peter 1:18-19 are all important in the context of **“Christ our Passover,”** along with Genesis 8:21.

**“And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.”**

**“For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people’s: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.”**

**“For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.”**

**“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot” 1 Peter 1:18-19.**

**“And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man’s sake; for the imagination of man’s heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done.”**




### **Propitiation is “the Saviour” and “savour”**

The voluntary, sinless sacrifice **“which taketh away the sin of the world”** of the Lord Jesus Christ Himself **“to God”** as **“a sweetsmelling savour”** turned away God’s wrath as Noah’s sacrifice did after the flood, for anyone who believes that the Lord Jesus Christ is both **“the Saviour”** and **“savour”** for him personally, John 3:36.

This is **“propitiation.”**

Drs Waite and DiVietro may dismiss the above as an example of having to **“chase all over the King James Bible to find the definitions of its words”**<sup>40</sup> but **“he that seeketh findeth”** Matthew 7:7 and **“unto you that hear shall more be given”** Mark 4:24.

**The Saving Work of  
Jesus Christ**

- Redemption = Jesus Christ **PAID THE PRICE** for all sins 
- Propitiation = Jesus Christ **SATISFIED** the justice of God the Father 
- Reconciliation = God’s **PEACE TREATY** with the entire human race 

Propitiation – Christ’s Appeasement of God’s Justifiable Wrath

[www.lbible.org/index.php?proc=msg&sf=vw&tid=429](http://www.lbible.org/index.php?proc=msg&sf=vw&tid=429)

## **“STAND FIRM, YE BOYS FROM MAINE”**

### **Testimony of Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain**



**“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”  
1 Corinthians 16:13**

#### **Introduction**

A fascinating leader to emerge from the Ken Burns series *The Civil War*<sup>41</sup> was Brigadier General Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain<sup>42</sup> 1828-1914, an academic and theologian from Bowdoin College, Maine. Aged 34, he was appointed to command the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine Volunteer Infantry in 1862 and served with distinction at Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Petersburg and Five Forks. General Ulysses S. Grant<sup>43</sup>, commander of the Union armies, selected Chamberlain to receive the surrender of the Southern army at Appomattox Court House on April 12<sup>th</sup> 1865. Here Chamberlain made the unforgettable and honourable gesture of a parade ground salute to the defeated enemy, returned by General John B. Gordon, the Confederate commander, who remembered Chamberlain as “*one of the knightliest soldiers of the Federal Army.*” Chamberlain was awarded the Medal of Honour in 1893 for service at Gettysburg. He was diligent and thereby served his nation loyally, as Christian men should.

**“Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men”** Proverbs 22:29.

Chamberlain’s biography *In the Hands of Providence* by Alice Rains Trulock focuses on his war service and subsequent career but Trulock reveals that Chamberlain was a committed Christian with a resilient faith that sustained him through the worst of the Civil War. Chamberlain’s life and testimony show that God’s promise to Isaiah still holds good today.

**“When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee”** Isaiah 43:2.



**“Stand firm, ye boys from Maine”**

Chamberlain led the vital and victorious defence of the Round Tops at Gettysburg on July 2<sup>nd</sup> 1863. The battle raged throughout the glaring heat of the July afternoon “*with exhaustion and terrible losses...taking a great toll on both sides,*” Trulock pp 146-147. One of the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine’s men, Private later Rev. Theodore Gerrish<sup>44</sup>, later testified of the conflict “*...not once in a century are men permitted to bear such responsibilities for freedom and justice, for God and humanity, as are now placed upon you...Stand firm, ye boys from Maine.*” See graphic. That was really Chamberlain’s testimony and the Christian has a like exhortation. **“Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong”** 1 Corinthians 16:13.

**“Safety is of the LORD”**

Chamberlain, disdainful of personal danger, stood conspicuously on top of a large boulder so that he could oversee the action. Trulock writes “*A Confederate from the Fifteenth Alabama...drew bead on Chamberlain...but something - a strange feeling - caused him to stop. Puzzled and impatient with himself, he tried again to squeeze the trigger but could not. Finally, he gave it up, and this perilous moment in Chamberlain’s life passed, all unknown to him.*” As Solomon observed **“The horse is prepared against the day of battle: but safety is of the LORD”** Proverbs 21:31. That is an encouragement for today’s believer.

**“Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient savior. I go to him”**

Chamberlain was severely wounded in the battle of Petersburg, Virginia, June 18<sup>th</sup> 1864, Trulock, pp 214-215. He was taken to the division hospital, already choked with wounded. A private of the 143<sup>rd</sup> Pennsylvania lay on an operating table awaiting amputation of his leg. “*He heard Chamberlain ask to be laid to one side, saying that he was all right and they should take care of his boys.*” Instead, the surgeons gave priority to Chamberlain but they thought he would not survive. The bullet “*had torn through his whole body from right thigh to left hip, severing blood vessels, nicking the urethra and bladder, and crushing bone before it stopped.*” Nevertheless, the surgeons worked on Chamberlain all night, though stopping at one point because of his terrible pain. He urged them to continue but in the cold light of dawn, believing death was near, he pencilled a short note to his wife and children:

*“My darling wife I am lying mortally wounded the doctors think but my mind & heart are at peace Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient savior. I go to him. God bless & keep & comfort you, precious one, you have been a precious wife to me. To know & love you makes life & death beautiful. Cherish the darlings & give my love to all the dear ones. Do not grieve too much for me. We shall all soon meet Live for the children Give my dearest love to Father, mother & Sally and John Oh how happy to feel yourself forgiven God bless you evermore precious, precious one Ever yours Lawrence”* It was not, however, **“the day of death”** Ecclesiastes 8:8 for Chamberlain. That is God’s decision, as every believer should note.

“*Jesus Christ is my all-sufficient savior*” is nevertheless the essential testimony for every individual, as Peter declared. **“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved”** Acts 4:12.

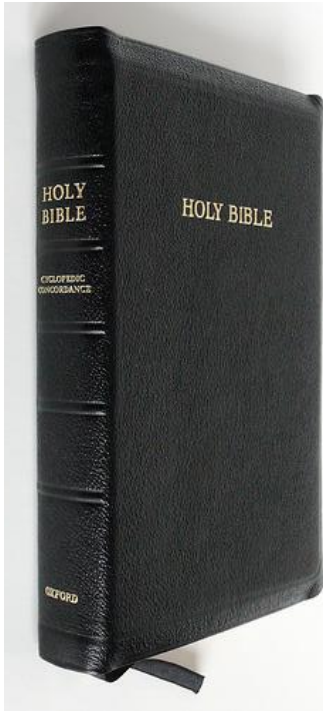
**“I have finished my course”**

After the war, Chamberlain pursued a long and distinguished career in public life and was elected State Governor for Maine four times. Though still plagued by his wound, he lived to the age of 85. His final testimony was as Paul’s and as the Christian’s should be. **“I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith”** 2 Timothy 4:7.

## AV1611 Authority - Absolute

### **“The book of the purchase” Jeremiah 32:12**

#### **“The book of the purchase” Jeremiah 32:12**



AV1611 authority is absolute and cannot be detracted from. All detractions, whether from modern versions or ‘the Greek’ etc., are by subversives **“which corrupt the word of God”** 2 Corinthians 2:17 because the AV1611 is **“the book of the purchase”** Jeremiah 32:12 and God oversaw the purchase:

- It was initiated by **“The word of the Lord.”** **“And Jeremiah said, The word of the LORD came unto me saying, Behold, Hanameel the son of Shallum thine uncle shall come unto thee, saying, Buy thee my field that is in Anathoth”** Jeremiah 32:6.
- It was confirmed by **“the right of redemption...thine to buy it...according to the word of the LORD.”** **“for the right of redemption is thine to buy it. So Hanameel mine uncle’s son came to me...according to the word of the LORD, and said unto me, Buy my field,...that is in Anathoth...for the right of inheritance is thine, and the redemption is thine...Then I knew that this was the word of the LORD”** Jeremiah 32:7-8.

#### **King James Bible, Oxford Brevier Edition**

- It was enacted by the purchaser. **“And I bought the field of Hanameel...and weighed him the money, even seventeen shekels of silver”** Jeremiah 32:9.
- It was formalised by **“the evidence of the purchase.”** **“And I subscribed the evidence, and sealed it...So I took the evidence of the purchase, both that which was sealed according to the law and custom, and that which was open...And I gave the evidence of the purchase unto Baruch the son of Neriah, the son of Maaseiah, in the sight of Hanameel mine uncle’s son”** Jeremiah 32:10-12.
- It was underwritten by **“the book of the purchase...in the presence of the witnesses that subscribed the book of the purchase, before all the Jews that sat in the court of the prison”** Jeremiah 32:12. God covenanted the purchase and **“wrote it in a book”** 1 Samuel 10:25. The significance for the AV1611’s absolute authority is this:

#### **Covenanted Purchase**

Even if for evil, a purchase in scripture is a covenant. **“And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money”** Luke 22:5 and in scripture, not even a manmade covenant may be objected to after it has been confirmed. **“Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man’s covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto”** Galatians 3:15. That is, even **“a man’s covenant”** may not be detracted from once confirmed. Jeremiah’s covenanted purchase was delineated in five specific steps. It was initiated, confirmed, enacted, formalised and underwritten by **“the book of the purchase.”** That Book cannot be detracted from. *Neither can the AV1611.*

#### **“The book of the purchase” and of “the purchased possession”**

The AV1611 is both **“the book of the purchase”** Jeremiah 32:12 and of **“the purchased possession”** as Paul explains with respect to the Lord Jesus Christ **“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is”**

**the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory**” Ephesians 1:13-14. Compare with Jeremiah 32:6-12:

- **“the word of truth”** Ephesians 1:13 matches **“The word of the Lord”** Jeremiah 32:6.
- **“sealed with that holy Spirit of promise”** Ephesians 1:13 matches **“subscribed the evidence, and sealed it”** Jeremiah 32:10.
- **“the earnest of our inheritance”** Ephesians 1:14 matches **“the right of inheritance”** Jeremiah 32:8 and **“the evidence of the purchase”** Jeremiah 32:11.
- **“the redemption of the purchased possession”** Ephesians 1:14 matches **“the right of redemption”** Jeremiah 32:7 and **“the book of the purchase”** Jeremiah 32:12 **“For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope”** Romans 15:4.

The AV1611 is both **“the book of the purchase”** and the Book of **“the purchased possession”** because it is **“the word of a king”** Ecclesiastes 8:4 *in that it is the only Bible since 1611 translated under a king and Jeremiah’s purchase was initiated by the King* **“For God is the King of all the earth”** Psalm 47:7. Note too that Ephesians is written in a Book. Note also with respect to **“the purchased possession”** that:

- **“ye are not your own...ye are bought with a price”** 1 Corinthians 6:19-20.
- God covenanted the purchase **“through the blood of the everlasting covenant”** Hebrews 13:20 which is **“my blood of the new testament”** Matthew 26:28.
- God **“wrote it in a book”** 1 Samuel 10:25, which in addition to being **“the book of the purchase”** and the Book of **“the purchased possession”** is also **“the book of the covenant”** Exodus 24:7, 2 Kings 23:2, 2 Chronicles 34:30.
- This Book consists of **“the old testament”** 2 Corinthians 3:14 and **“the new testament”** 2 Corinthians 3:6 and is **“the book of the law of the LORD”** 2 Chronicles 17:9, 34:14, Nehemiah 9:3 matching **“the law and custom”** Jeremiah 32:11.
- This Book is **“the royal law according to the scripture”** James 2:8<sup>45</sup>, matching Jeremiah 32:11. Only one Book satisfies all the above conditions. No modern version has any legitimate claim to being called royal, as Wilkinson<sup>46</sup> shows. *“Twice [the 1881 revisers] had appealed to the Government in hopes that, as in the case of the King James in 1611, the King would appoint a royal commission. They were refused.”*

### **Detractors without Authority, “wells without water” 2 Peter 2:17**

With the AV1611 as **“the book of the purchase”** and **“of the purchased possession”** its detractors are as **“wells without water”** 2 Peter 2:17. They have no *Biblical* authority to:

- Call any modern version **“the word of God”** 1 Samuel 9:27.
- Circulate any modern version as **“the word of God”** as, for example, the Gideons do.
- Convene any translating committee to set up a rival to the AV1611 King James Text, especially insofar as **“Where the word of a king is, there is power: and who may say unto him, What doest thou?”** Ecclesiastes 8:4. See Wilkinson’s comment above.
- Exalt anything **“in the Greek”** or **“in the Hebrew”** Revelation 9:11 over the AV1611 **“the book of the purchase”** and **“of the purchased possession.”**

### **AV1611 Absolute Authority**

As **“the book of the purchase”** and **“of the purchased possession”** the AV1611 has absolute authority as **“the word of a king.”** Detractors should therefore note Proverbs 16:14. **“The wrath of a king is as messengers of death: but a wise man will pacify it.”**



## **“The book of the LORD” Isaiah 34:16**

### **Introduction**

“**The book of the LORD**” is the 1611 Holy Bible. There is no other. **“Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and his spirit it hath gathered them”** Isaiah 34:16.



### **Practical Considerations**

- The Lord has *one* Book, **“the book of the LORD”** Isaiah 34:16, the *one* mention of that phrase in scripture.
- The Lord’s *one* Book, **“the book of the LORD”** therefore matches the *oneness* of **“one body, and one Spirit,...one hope of your calling; One Lord, one faith, one baptism, One God and Father of all”** Ephesians 4:4-6.
- The Lord’s *one* Book, **“the book of the LORD”** is for **“every man...in his own language”** Acts 2:6 insofar as **“Peter...with the eleven”** Acts 2:14 **“were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance”** Acts 2:4 such that the listeners said **“hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born...we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God”** Acts 2:8, 11.
- The Lord’s *one* Book, **“the book of the LORD”** therefore exists in many languages, *but the standard for “the book of the LORD” is the 1611 Holy Bible in English.*

See [store-hicb8.mybigcommerce.com/content/bbb/2013/Aug.pdf](http://store-hicb8.mybigcommerce.com/content/bbb/2013/Aug.pdf) p 6 *A Brief Analysis of Missionary Authority* by Jonathan Richmond, Bible Baptist Mission Board director.

*The espousal of a particular translation being equal to or superior to the **King James** leaves one in a precarious position in relation to Bible believers versus the Alexandrian Cult.*

*Bible believers believe that the **King James (Authorized Version)** is the perfect, inerrant words of God and is the final authority. It is the standard to which all versions and translations are compared. And since the AV is the standard, it is superior to anything and everything that is compared to it. Stated another way, nothing compared to the standard is equal to or superior to the standard. English is the standard for time, place, distance, size, quantity, volume, language, etc. When the English standard showed up, both the German and Spanish Bibles [i.e. any non-English Bible] should have been corrected and/or updated with the English.*

*The Greek Textus Receptus (any edition) is not superior to English. It was an interim, early New Testament, a stepping stone to the purification of the words of God in English. The world does not speak Greek and never will again...*

Jonathan Richmond concludes with a rebuke to ‘originals-onlyists’ and ‘Greekiolators’:

*So then **your** brain determines which is correct; **your** brain is the final authority; **you** have made **yourself** equal to God.*

As Gail Ripplinger has rightly said, *In Awe of Thy Word* p 956, this writer’s emphases:

*The desire to appear intelligent or superior by referring to ‘the Greek’ and downplaying the common man’s Bible, exposes a naivety concerning textual history and those documents which today’s pseudo-intellectuals call ‘the critical text,’ ‘the original Greek,’ the ‘Majority Text,’ or the ‘Textus Receptus.’ **There existed a true original Greek (i.e. Majority Text, Textus Receptus). It is not in print and never will be, because it is unnecessary. No one on the planet speaks first century Koine Greek, so God is finished with it. He needs no ‘Dead Bible Society’ to translate it into “everyday English,” using the same corrupt secularised lexicons used by the TNIV, NIV, NASB and***

HCSB [Holman Christian Standard Bible]. *God has not called readers to check his Holy Bible for errors. He has called his Holy Bible to check us for errors.*"

- The Lord's one Book, "**the book of the LORD**" is:
  - "**the book of the covenant**" Exodus 24:7, 2 Kings 23:2, 21, 2 Chronicles 34:30, "**the everlasting covenant**" Hebrews 13:20 between God and believers
  - "**thy book**" Exodus 32:32, one witness to "**the book of the LORD**"
  - "**my book**" Exodus 32:33, two witnesses, 2 Corinthians 13:1, to "**the book of the LORD**"
  - "**the book of the law of God**" Joshua 24:26, Nehemiah 8:18 i.e. "**the book of the law of the LORD**" 2 Chronicles 17:9, 34:14, Nehemiah 9:3 or simply "**the book of the law**" Joshua 8:31, 34, 2 Kings 22:8, 11, 2 Chronicles 34:15, Nehemiah 8:3, Galatians 3:10. That Book is now "**the law of Christ**" Galatians 6:2.
  - "**the book of the living**" Psalm 69:28 i.e. "**the book of life**" Philippians 4:3, Revelation 3:5, 17:8, 20:12, 15, 22:19, "**the book of life of the Lamb**" Revelation 13:8, "**the Lamb's book of life**" Revelation 21:27
  - "**the book of the LORD**" Isaiah 34:16
  - "**the book of the purchase**" Jeremiah 32:12 for "**the purchased possession**" Ephesians 1:14, "**us accepted in the beloved**" Ephesians 1:6. See AV1611 Authority - Absolute [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/version-comparison.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/version-comparison.php).

### **Principles of Understanding**

- The Lord does *not* recognise "**many books**" Ecclesiastes 12:12 i.e. multiple *differing* translations in any one language. That is "**confused noise**" Isaiah 9:5 and "**God is not the author of confusion**" 1 Corinthians 14:33.
- The Lord has commanded "**Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read.**" That is, "**the book of the LORD**" not "**many books**" must be *sought after* and *read*.
- The command "**Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read**" can only be fulfilled if "**the book of the LORD**" is in "**words easy to be understood**" 1 Corinthians 14:9.
- An 'originals-onlyist' does not and never can have *one* Book to seek after and read. 'Originals-onlyism' is among the "**damnable heresies**" 2 Peter 2:1.

### **Permanence of "the book of the LORD"**

- "**no one of these shall fail**" because "**the word of the Lord endureth for ever**" 1 Peter 1:25 and is "**The words of the LORD**" Psalm 12:6. "**Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by thy name, O LORD God of hosts**" Jeremiah 15:16.
- "**none shall want her mate**" because those words are "**the words...which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual**" 1 Corinthians 2:13 i.e. cross-referencing of "**the words...which the Holy Ghost teacheth**" so that the student "**might understand the scriptures**" Luke 24:45.
- "**my mouth it hath commanded**" because it is "**the word which he commanded to a thousand generations**" 1 Chronicles 16:15, Psalm 105:8 and "**the word of the Lord**" 1 Peter 1:25 is "**The words of the LORD**" Psalm 12:6 with Jeremiah 15:16 "**Thy words...thy word.**"
- "**and his spirit it hath gathered them**" because "**the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life**" John 6:63 and "**the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost...he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you**" John 14:26.

Therefore "**receive with meekness the engrafted word**" James 1:21 "**the book of the LORD**" as "**obedient children**" 1 Peter 1:14 without any "**Not so, Lord**" Acts 10:14.

***Yes, the King James Bible IS Perfect***  
A Biblical response to Bible critics

### ***Introduction***

This article is a response to a leaflet published some years ago, no later than 2007, that the King James Bible is imperfect. It was entitled *Is The King James Version Perfect?*. The leaflet was written by Michael Penfold who headed up the Bicester booksellers Penfold Book & Bible House.

The content of the leaflet is on [www.webtruth.org/articles/bible-version-issues-22/is-the-king-james-version-perfect-30.html](http://www.webtruth.org/articles/bible-version-issues-22/is-the-king-james-version-perfect-30.html). Penfold Book & Bible House was later absorbed by John Ritchie Christian Media. PB&BH is listed on [thechristianmarketplace.co.uk/main/node/636](http://thechristianmarketplace.co.uk/main/node/636) but the number 01869 249574 returns *an incorrect number* and [www.johnritchie.co.uk](http://www.johnritchie.co.uk) gets timed out.

PB&BH is listed on [www.christianbookshops.org.uk/penfoldbicester.htm](http://www.christianbookshops.org.uk/penfoldbicester.htm) but [John Ritchie Christian Media](http://www.johnritchie.co.uk) and [Penfold Book & Bible House](http://www.penfoldbookandbiblehouse.co.uk) return *404 Page Not Found*. A search reveals Christian Media Ritchie [www.ritchiechristianmedia.co.uk/](http://www.ritchiechristianmedia.co.uk/). CMR [www.ritchiechristianmedia.co.uk/Bibles-18](http://www.ritchiechristianmedia.co.uk/Bibles-18) sells besides the KJV no fewer than 8 other versions; Amplified Bible, ESV, HCSB, NCV, NIV, NKJV, NLT, GNB. That is, CMR does not believe that the 1611 Holy Bible is perfect and **“All scripture...given by inspiration of God”** 2 Timothy 3:16 any more than Michael Penfold did.

The demise of PB&BH brings to mind Revelation 2:5. **“Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.”** Michael Penfold did not repent and so the Lord took away his ministry candlestick because **“God is no respecter of persons”** Acts 10:34.

It is hoped therefore that this article will encourage all true Bible believers to hold fast to the AV1611 as **“All scripture...given by inspiration of God”** 2 Timothy 3:16.

### ***Critical Inconsistency and Infidelity***

The leaflet begins with the statement that the AV1611 “*is an excellent translation*” and “*the word of God in English.*” However, its last paragraph asks “*What is the word of God today?*” The answer is that “*The word of God exists wherever a faithful translation is made of what was originally written. To a very high degree, that is what the KJV is.*” That is, the AV1611 is not “*an excellent translation*” nor “*the word of God in English*” but rather “*a faithful translation*” that isn’t quite “*the word of God*” but contains “*the word of God...to a very high degree.*” This type of inconsistency is typical of Bible critics. It is invariably accompanied by infidelity. Michael Penfold concludes with the statement “*no single book, even in Greek and Hebrew, has ever existed that had every single letter and word of the entire Bible in place - in the right place...*” That is, there is no Holy Bible.

Yet the Lord Jesus Christ said **“Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away”** Matthew 24:35. God called those words **“my book”** Exodus 32:33. Michael Penfold says that *God and Jesus lied* and that Titus 1:2 **“God...cannot lie”** is wrong. Sheer infidelity.

### ***Old Fashioned English***

It is not surprising then to read that the AV1611 English is “*old fashioned.*” However, Dr Lawrence M. Vance has shown in his book *Archaic Words and the Authorised Version* that much of the AV1611 vocabulary is found in many respected contemporary journals. Dr Edward F. Hills has said “*the English of the King James Version...is not a type of English that was ever spoken anywhere. It is biblical English...*” See [wilderness-cry.net/bible\\_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html](http://wilderness-cry.net/bible_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html) *The King James Version Defended*, p 218. “*The English of the King James Version*” is therefore both familiar and timeless.

The leaflet, of course, does not mention the many contemporary AV1611 expressions, e.g. “*addict,*” “*artillery,*” “*God save the king,*” “*powers that be,*” “*head in the clouds,*” “*housekeeping,*” “*communication,*” “*learn by experience,*” “*labour of love,*” “*shambles,*” “*advertise,*” “*publish,*” “*beer,*” “*the course of nature*” etc. This is yet more inconsistency, of which Proverbs 11:1 states **“A false balance is abomination to the LORD.”**

### *Differences between AV1611 Editions*

The leaflet, predictably, objects to differences between AV1611 editions. However, in *Translators Revived* pp 223-224, Alexander McClure describes the results of a comparison between six AV1611 editions, including the original 1611 edition, carried out by the American Bible Society in 1849-1852. He states:

*“The number of variations in the text and punctuation of these six copies was found to fall but little short of twenty-four thousand. A vast amount! Quite enough to frighten us, till we read the Committee’s assurance, that “of all this great number, there is not one which mars the integrity of the text, or affects any doctrine or precept of the Bible.””*

In spite of this 160 year-old assurance, the leaflet then cites 8 notable examples drawn from 421 readings where the contemporary AV1611 is claimed to differ significantly from the 1611 AV1611. They are as follows, the 1611 reading followed by the 2011+ reading, with this writer’s comments.

#### *1. Genesis 39:16, “her lord” versus “his lord”*

1 Peter 3:6 and Esther 1:22 show that *both* readings are correct. Unlike Sarah, Potiphar’s wife was not a godly woman but her attempted infidelity did not affect her status before her husband in God’s sight.

#### *2. Leviticus 20:11, “shall be put to death” versus “shall surely be put to death”*

The omission of “*surely*” from verse 11 in the 1611 edition is a printing error but the text is not affected.

#### *3. Deuteronomy 5:29, “my commandments” versus “all my commandments”*

The 2011+ edition simply has added emphasis.

#### *4. 2 Kings 11:10, “in the temple” versus “in the temple of the Lord”*

2 Kings 11 reads “*house of the Lord*” in verses 3, 4 twice, 7, 15, 18, 19 and “*temple of the Lord*” in verse 13 so there is no contradiction between editions about the identity of the “*the temple*” in verse 10.

#### *5. Isaiah 49:13, “God hath comforted” versus “the Lord hath comforted”*

Both editions are consistent with respect to the identity of the Comforter in verse 13.

#### *6. Ezekiel 24:7, “poured it upon the ground” versus “poured it not upon the ground”*

The 1611 reading is a printing error, corrected in subsequent editions.

#### *7. 1 Timothy 1:4, “edifying” versus “godly edifying”*

There is no uncertainty in either edition about the “*godly*” nature of the edifying.

#### *8. 1 John 5:12, “the Son” versus “the Son of God”*

Both editions are clear about the identity of “*the Son*” although the 2011+ AV1611 reading is more explicit. It was introduced in 1638, according to Dr. Scrivener, *The Authorized Version of the English Bible (1611)*, p 193.

The American Bible Society has this appraisal:

*“That the edition of 1611, although prepared with very great care, was not free from typographical errors; and that, while most of these were corrected in the edition of 1613, others in much greater number were nevertheless then introduced, which have since been removed. That the revision of Dr. Blayney made by collating the then current editions of Oxford and Cambridge with those of 1611 and 1701 had for its main object to restore the text of the English Bible to its original purity: and that this was successfully accomplished.”*



### **God's Word Before 1611**

Typically for such publications, the leaflet asks “*Where was the perfect, inerrant, preserved word of God in 1610?*” Dr. Miles Smith explains in *The Translators to the Reader* [www.jesus-is-lord.com/pref1611.htm](http://www.jesus-is-lord.com/pref1611.htm).

*“Truly (good Christian Reader) we never thought from the beginning, that we should need to make a new Translation, nor yet to make of a bad one a good one...but to make a good one better, or out of many good ones, one principal good one, not justly to be excepted against; that hath been our endeavor, that our mark.”*

### **Marginal Differences**

Again, typically, the leaflet states that “*The KJV translators suggest thousands of corrections...[the 1611 translators] did not believe they had picked exactly the right word or phrase in every case. They included the following in the margin: 4,223 more literal meanings, 2,738 alternative translations and 104 variant readings.*”

The marginal insertions show that the AV1611 translators were honest researchers. Of their efforts, the Trinitarian Bible Society stated in *Fruit Among The Leaves*, Quarterly Record, July-September 1980, No. 472 that “*In most cases the reading in the text of the Authorised Version is superior to the alternative given in the margin.*” Significantly, the TBS has not identified any *inferior* readings in the text. Neither did Michael Penfold though he purported to have found *Imperfections in the KJV*.

### **“Imperfections in the KJV”**

The leaflet concludes with 32 ‘imperfections’ in the AV1611. See **Table 1**. The ecumenical agreement between the NIV, NKJV, Rome (JB, Jerusalem Bible) and Watchtower (NWT, New World Translation) should be noted. *That was the direction in which Michael Penfold was headed.*

### **Conclusion**

Having studied the supposed ‘imperfections’ of the AV1611 for 30 years, this writer agrees with the J.A. Moorman in *When The KJV Departs From The “Majority” Text* p 28. J. A. Moorman is addressing ‘minority’ readings in the AV1611 but his comments apply to *all* AV1611 readings.

*“When a version has been the standard as long as the Authorized Version, and when that version has demonstrated its power in the conversion of sinners, building up of believers, sending forth of preachers and missionaries on a scale not achieved by all other versions and foreign language editions combined; the hand of God is at work. Such a version must not be tampered with. And in those comparatively few places where it seems to depart from the majority reading [or from however many supposedly ‘improved’ readings], it would be far more honouring toward God’s promises of preservation to believe that the Greek and not the English had strayed from the original!” Amen.*

***“And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up”*** Deuteronomy 6:6-7. Therefore:

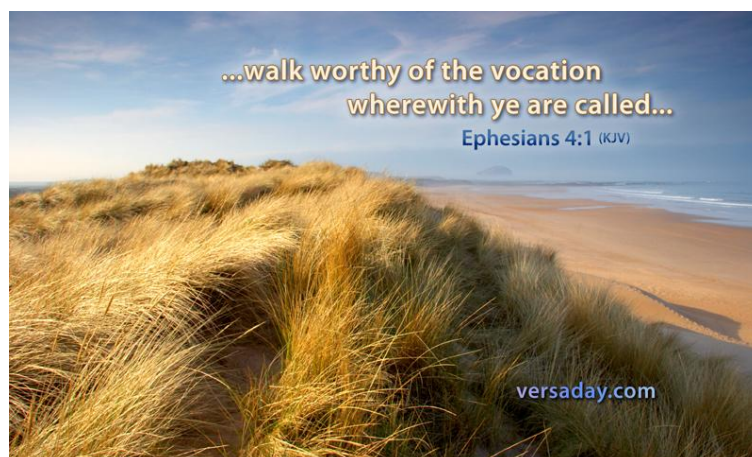




Table 1

**'X' Marks the Spot - "Imperfections" in the AV1611, 'Corrected' by Modern Versions**

John 1:32-1 Peter 1:11: the Spirit as **"it," "itself"** to **"he," "himself"**

*Note John 16:13-14 **"...for he shall not speak of himself...He shall glorify me..."***

Acts 12:4: **"Easter"** to **"Passover"**

*Note Acts 12:3 **"Then were the days of unleavened bread."***

Genesis 44:7-Galatians 6:14: **"God forbid"** to e.g. **"Never may that happen"** NWT Romans 6:15

*Note Job 37:7 **"He sealeth up the hand of every man; that all men may know his work."***

Titus 2:13, 2 Peter 1:1: **"the great God and our Saviour"** to **"our great God and Saviour"**

*"Our great God and Saviour" relegates the Lord Jesus Christ to just one of the New Age 'gods.'*

Acts 1:20: **"bishopricks"** to **"office"** or similar

*Note 2 Corinthians 11:15 on Satan's ministers **"transformed as the ministers of righteousness."***

Acts 19:37: **"churches"** to **"temples"**

*"Churches" points to Rome **"the great whore"** Revelation 17:1, "temples" does not.*

Verse ↓	JB	NWT	NIV	NKJV
John 1:32				X
Romans 8:16	X		X	X
Romans 8:26	X		X	X
1 Peter 1:11			X	X
Acts 12:4	X	X	X	X
Genesis 44:7	X	X	X	X
Genesis 44:17	X	X	X	X
Joshua 22:29	X	X	X	X
Joshua 24:16	X	X	X	X
1 Samuel 12:23	X	X	X	X
1 Samuel 14:45	X	X	X	X
1 Samuel 20:2	X	X	X	X
Job 27:5	X	X	X	X
Luke 20:16		X	X	
Romans 3:4	X	X	X	X
Romans 3:6	X	X	X	X
Romans 3:31	X	X	X	X
Romans 6:2	X	X	X	X
Romans 6:15	X	X	X	X
Romans 7:7	X	X	X	X
Romans 7:13	X	X	X	X
Romans 9:14	X	X	X	X
Romans 11:1	X	X	X	X
Romans 11:11	X	X	X	X
1 Corinthians 6:15	X	X	X	X
Galatians 2:17	X	X	X	X
Galatians 3:21	X	X	X	X
Galatians 6:14	X	X	X	
Titus 2:13	X		X	X
2 Peter 1:1	X	X	X	X
Acts 1:20	X	X	X	X
Acts 19:37	X	X	X	X
<b>'Improvements'</b>	<b>91 %</b>	<b>84 %</b>	<b>97 %</b>	<b>94 %</b>

# The Manuscript Dichotomy – Bro. Al Cuppett’s Vision Vindicated

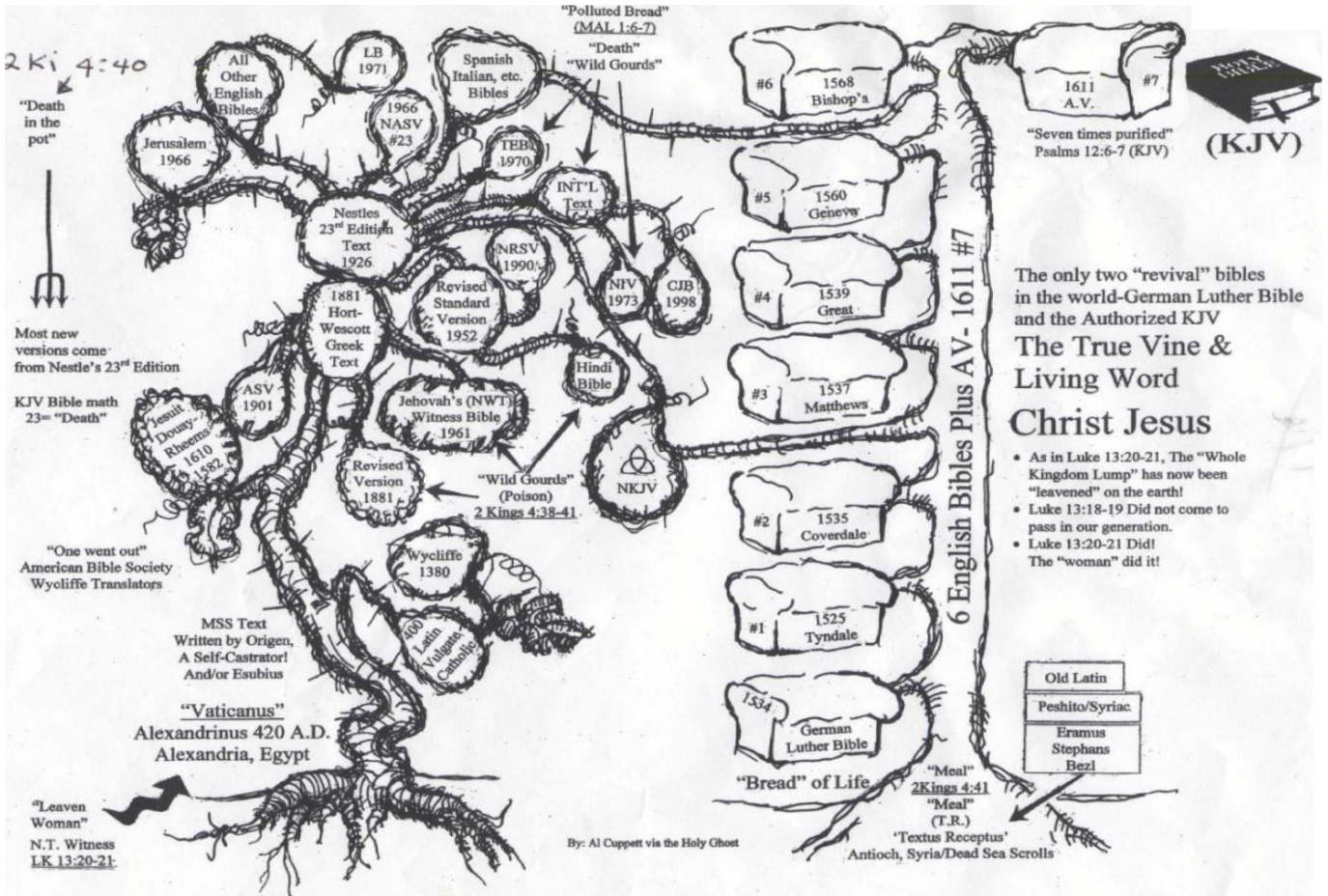
“Where there is no vision, the people perish: but he that keepeth the law, happy is he”

Proverbs 29:18, [www.kjvprophecy.com/Articles/BibleOrigins.pdf](http://www.kjvprophecy.com/Articles/BibleOrigins.pdf) (Updated Chart)

## Corrupt Manuscript Ascension – “Wild Vine”

## Pure Manuscript Ascension

1604-1611, 7 Years



### Al Cuppett [alcuppett.wordpress.com/](http://alcuppett.wordpress.com/) Summary

(N.B. The former site with this material is now corrupt. The same information is on the above site)

Alexander B. Cuppett served as “Action Officer” with the Pentagon, Joint Chiefs of Staff (Department of Defense). While serving in official capacity, he was awarded both the Bronze Star and the Purple Heart. Cuppett also received the Secretary of Defense Civilian Service Medal upon his retirement in 1990 after 21 years of service in the United States Army. Mr. Cuppett gained notoriety for his public talks warning of the emergence of the New World Order in America and bringing attention to the alarming evidence that foreign troops and armaments were showing up in the USA. He was one of the first people to sound the alarm regarding the maintaining of Red and Blue Lists which would be used to round up people during a martial law scenario and bring attention to the construction of FEMA concentration camps. In the early 1990s Cuppett appeared on a speaking tour with the well-known TV program *The Prophecy Club* and gained fame with his talks on Black Ops and Bible prophecy, ultimately producing 2 video programs that were best sellers during that time period.



Al Cuppett US Army & Action Officer, the Joint Chiefs of Staff (Retired)

From Al Cuppett's website [alcuppett.wordpress.com/2012/08/](http://alcuppett.wordpress.com/2012/08/):

My advice: Get an old *Authorized King James Bible* and start praying to Jesus, because our time as free people is just about over. "*Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell you the truth?*" [Galatians 4:16]. (N.B. The site address has been changed)

Al Cuppett

More from Al Cuppett's website [alcuppett.wordpress.com/page/5/](http://alcuppett.wordpress.com/page/5/), search for key words to find exact quote in situ: (N.B. The site address has been changed with format changes only to content)

Advice: Get yourself an old fashioned King James Bible [Authorized Version], permanently discarding all other bible versions, including the "numeric coded Greek and Hebrew" portions of the Strong's Exhaustive Concordance, and start fasting and praying. The Holy Ghost cannot manifest faith, hope, peace, joy, etc, in your spirit in a language you cannot understand. You're gonna need guidance; and that right early saint! **READ THE LAST PARAGRAPH IF YOU READ NOTHING ELSE!!**

And if these Greek "scholars" ever admitted God Almighty gave us a perfect "*Psalm 12:6-7*" (KJV-only) Bible these educated morons would have to get an honest job!!! However, most of such "learned" people happen to be pastors in pulpits who "fleece their sheep" weekly. Just read about "*polluted bread*" in Malachi 1, verses 6 to about 12. But, hey, what do I know, I'm just a Railway Mail Clerk's son? I'll bet the Jesuit infiltrators at **Lee College** and **Central Bible College** will do a slow burn when they read this paragraph. So be it! They got to dear Brother Swaggart back in 1988. Are they gonna get you too? *Or have they gotten to you already?*

*"For ever, O Lord thy word is settled in heaven". Psm 119:89 – KJV ONLY. So, if the bible you're using doesn't match what's "for ever settled" in heaven, you have a Jesuitic counterfeit. Thus, the Holy Spirit is exponentially bound, and the resultant spiritual vacuum of holiness/heaven sent power has been filled by evil in our churches AND OUR LAND, since about 1970. Therefore, the New World Order has come in "like a flood". Hence, the foreign troops! Get back to the KJV, the old blood washed hymns, discarding forever praise and worship, since you must wash by the "water of the word" WHICH IS THE KJV BIBLE-ONLY, before entering into the holy throne room of God. LOOK—! Doing praise and worship with ANY sin in your heart is an abomination! Praise and worship without pure repentance beforehand is an ignorant or perverted attempt to APPEASE God! THINK! David Wilkerson preached the precepts just above in the italicized print, in 1988, not me. He also says the angels cast this kind of [UNCLEAN] praise back on the earth as judgment!!*

Wilkerson and Cuppett are right. "*He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination*" Proverbs 28:9 with Proverbs 29:18 above. Be encouraged, though:





***“The Spirit itself”*** Romans 8:16, 26

*The 1611 Holy Bible versus Lying satanic Jacob Prasch Prequel* pp 15-16, 45-48

The Holy Spirit is rightly referred to as ‘it’ - or more precisely ***“itself”***, as in Romans 8:16, 17, 26 – with respect to His ministry, because, John 16:8-11 notwithstanding, the Lord Jesus Christ compared the essence of the Spirit’s ministry to a neuter force. This is why the word *pneuma* is neuter. He stated in John 3:8, ***“The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is everyone that is born of the Spirit”***. By contrast, the angel of the Lord specifically designated Jesus’ ministry as that of a personal Saviour to Israel, Matthew 1:21. See also Romans 15:8. No honest reader of the AV1611 could therefore possibly get confused over the Person of the Lord Jesus Christ and His ministry.

***Jacob Prasch Backlash 1 Paras 6, 7, Points 4a, 4b***

Jacob Prasch’s Point 4 is actually two points, the first, designated Point 4a here, about the Holy Spirit, the second, designated Point 4b, about Herod.

Jacob Prasch goes all out with spat venom in his Point 4a. He rails ***“Your attempted justification of calling the Holy Spirit an “it” by the KJV, is preposterous.”***

At this point Jacob’s Prasch’s ire got the better of him and he diverged abruptly onto the subject of Herod i.e. Point 4b, which is addressed below. He picks up again on the subject of the Holy Spirit in the next paragraph as follows.

***“To suggest that the Holy Spirit can be called an “it” by drawing a distinction between His personhood and his (sic) ministry/office, is nonsense. Jesus called Him a person. If your warped argument were even remotely true (which it certainly is not), then the same distinction could be drawn between Jesus’ personhood and his (sic) ministry/office as Messiah, and Jesus could be referred to as an “it” (just as New Agers, with their view of the cosmic Christ, already relegated Him to that demeaned status.)”***

Jacob Prasch’s two comments above were his kneejerk reaction to this statement from this writer’s letter of August 29<sup>th</sup> 2001 in response to Jacob Prasch’s anti-Biblical article *The Truth About KJV Only: The Mormon, Ecumenical, Homosexual, and Neo Nazi Agendas*.

Para 7 p 12 states ***“After the [NWT] the Jehovah’s Witnesses prefer the KJV because...the KJV reduces the Holy Spirit from a person to an ‘it’ (the KJV translators...failed to grasp that gender in Greek does [not] mean what gender does in English)”***. No, you failed to grasp that scripture draws a distinction between the Person of the Holy Spirit and His office, or ministry. Compare John 16:13 and Romans 8:16.

John 16:13 states ***“Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.”*** The Lord is here revealing ***“the Spirit of truth”*** as a Person and then describing His future ministry with believers. Note further remarks on John 16:13 below in response to Bible critic Robert A. Joyner.

Romans 8:16 states ***“The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.”*** Paul is here describing the ministry of ***“the Spirit of truth”*** as it is carried out the believer *now*.

This writer answered Jacob Prasch’s ***Paras 6, 7, Point 4a*** in the letter of January 28<sup>th</sup> 2002 as follows.

The Holy Spirit is rightly referred to as ‘it’ - or more precisely ***“itself”***, as in Romans 8:16, 17, 26 – with respect to His ministry, because, John 16:8-11 notwithstanding, the Lord Jesus Christ compared the essence of the Spirit’s ministry to a neuter force. This is why the word *pneuma* is neuter. He stated in John 3:8, ***“The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is everyone that is born of the Spirit”***. By

contrast, the angel of the Lord specifically designated Jesus' ministry as that of a personal Saviour to Israel, Matthew 1:21. See also Romans 15:8. No honest reader of the AV1611 could therefore possibly get confused over the Person of the Lord Jesus Christ and His ministry.

Jacob Prasch naturally failed to compare John 16:13, Romans 8:16 and their respective contexts, preferring to remain wilfully ignorant of ***“the scripture of truth”*** Daniel 10:21.

See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/why-the-av-only-7434.php) *The 1611 Holy Bible versus Robert A. Joyner* p 7. No format changes have been made. All remarks that follow with respect to Robert A. Joyner apply equally to Jacob Prasch.

2. The KJV calls the Holy Spirit an “it” in Romans 8:16, 26. The NASB corrects this error and says the “Spirit Himself.” The context of the whole Bible shows the Holy Spirit is not an “it.” Can you, dear reader, feel comfortable calling the third person of the Trinity an “it”?

Robert A. Joyner is not qualified to speak of **The context of the whole Bible**. Robert A. Joyner cannot identify **the whole Bible** as ***“all scripture”*** that ***“is given by inspiration of God”*** 2 Timothy 3:16 as a single extant document between two covers.

Robert A. Joyner should ask himself how comfortable he is with directly contradicting ***“the words of our Lord Jesus Christ”*** 1 Timothy 6:3.

***“Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you”*** John 16:13-14.

Romans 8:17 refers to ***“joint-heirs with Christ.”*** Romans 8:27 states ***“And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God”*** matching ***“Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them”*** Hebrews 7:25. Like Romans 8:17, Romans 8:27 both refer to the Lord Jesus Christ, Whom ***“the Spirit of truth”*** glorifies and therefore is referred to as ***“it”*** in Romans 8:16, 26 because as the Lord Jesus Christ, Whom Robert A. Joyner has directly contradicted, said of ***“the Spirit of truth...he shall not speak of himself.”***

Note that Robert A. Joyner missed Peter's statement that is a further fulfilment of John 16:13 with respect to ***“the Spirit of truth”*** glorifying the Lord Jesus Christ. Robert A. Joyner is being prompted by some other spirit, 1 Kings 22:22, 2 Chronicles 18:21.

***“Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow”*** 1 Peter 1:11.

For further remarks on ***“the Spirit itself”*** Romans 8:16, 26 see [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/O Biblios' – The Book](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/O%20Biblios%20-%20The%20Book%20pp%20242-243) pp 242-243. No format changes have been made. Readings have been inserted in braces. Inspection of those readings shows that Jacob Prasch would have a hard time assigning gender to ***“the manifestation of the Spirit”*** 1 Corinthians 12:7 described therein even though gender is assigned to ***“the Spirit”*** with respect to *the oversight* of His ministry of bestowing spiritual gifts upon ***“the body of Christ, and members in particular”*** 1 Corinthians 12:27. ***“But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will”*** 1 Corinthians 12:11.



Our critic then objects to **“the Spirit itself”** AV1611, in **Romans 8:16, 26**, claiming the reading should be “himself,” DR, RV, NIV, JB, NJB (Romans 8:16, the NJB has “the Spirit personally” in Romans 8:26). The NWT and Berry’s TR have “itself,” Ne has both readings.

There are some manifestations of the Spirit of God, Ezekiel 1:20, 21, Revelation 4:5, where application of gender to **“Spirit”** would not be appropriate. The modern alteration obscures this revelation.

*“Now it came to pass in the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I was among the captives by the river of Chebar, that the heavens were opened, and I saw visions of God”* Ezekiel 1:1]

*“Whithersoever the spirit was to go, they went, thither was their spirit to go; and the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels. When those went, these went; and when those stood, these stood; and when those were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels”* Ezekiel 1:20-21]

*“And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God”* Revelation 4:5]

Dr Gipp [*The Answer Book* Samuel C. Gipp, Th.D.] pp 97-98, replies to our critic’s charge as follows: *“The word translated **“itself”** in Romans 8:26 is “pneuma” which means “spirit”...“pneuma” is a NEUTER, a fact which is known to even first year Greek language students. Thus, the King James Bible CORRECTLY translates pneuma “itself” because it would be grammatically incorrect to translate it “himself” as many of today’s inferior translations do. Since critics of the King James Bible like to deride it for pretended “mistranslations” of the Greek, it seems hypocritical indeed to criticize it here for properly translating the Greek. Then to add insult to ignorance they laud other versions such as...the NIV which INCORRECTLY render pneuma as “himself.”*

*“Secondly, in adding to their hypocrisy and exposing their disdain for God’s Bible, these same critics...will promote translations such as the NIV which call God a “What” in Acts 17:23. The Authorised Version correctly renders it **“Whom.”***

*“Thirdly...is a statement that Jesus Christ makes in John chapter 4 while dealing with the woman at the well...*

**““Ye worship ye know not what: we know **WHAT** we worship...”**

*“To whom is Jesus referring by the word **“what”**? The next verse defines His statement perfectly.*

**“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship **THE FATHER** in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.”**

*“Thus we see that Jesus finds referring to His own Father as **“what”** in verse 22 a **NON-ISSUE.**”*

See also [samgipp.com/answerbook/?page=33.htm](http://samgipp.com/answerbook/?page=33.htm).

The scripture itself explains why Romans 8:16, 26 contain the expression **“the Spirit itself.”** (“The Spirit himself” occurs nowhere in scripture.)

**“Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you”** John 16:13-14.

**“The Spirit of truth”** is glorifying the Lord Jesus Christ throughout Romans 8. See in particular Romans 8:17, 29, 34-39. Therefore **“he shall not speak of himself.”**

Simple, really

However, anyone intent on glorifying himself against **“the scripture of truth”** Daniel 10:21 would miss it. Note Dr Ruckman’s incisive evaluation, that applies directly to Jacob Prasch.

*“(Missed it, didn’t you, you God-forsaken Fundamental Greek scholars and Conservative Hebrew scholars and Evangelical textual critics - all of you orthodox Bible teachers. Missed it by a mile, didn’t you? Do you know why you did? Because God won’t bless a LIAR.)” – Dr Peter S. Ruckman, Biblical Scholarship p 355.*

Note that though the Lord Jesus Christ revealed the Spirit of God to be a Person, John 14:16-17, 26, 16:7-14, that revelation came earlier in God’s timing via *“the scripture of truth”* Daniel 10:21, not even from John the Baptist, who bore witness of the Lord, John 1:15 and of *“the Spirit”* John 1:32 but of *“the Spirit”* as a manifestation *“like a dove”* not as a Person.

Note the careful wording of the following scriptures.

*“The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound”* Isaiah 61:1.

*“The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised”* Luke 4:18.

Isaiah 61:1, Luke 4:18 together further reveal that *“The Spirit of the LORD”* is Himself God, Acts 5:3, 4 and *“the LORD”* is *“he,”* that is *“The Spirit of the Lord.”*

*Isaiah 61:1 and Luke 4:18 are therefore an example of progressive revelation from two different texts both “given by inspiration of God”* 2 Timothy 3:16!

*“O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!”* Romans 11:34.

That the first revelation of *“The Spirit of the Lord”* as a Person should come *via the scripture* and only *then* by the Lord Jesus Christ Himself afterwards is in keeping with the Lord’s elevation of *“the scripture of truth”* Daniel 10:21.

*“I will worship toward thy holy temple, and praise thy name for thy lovingkindness and for thy truth: for thou hast magnified thy word above all thy name”* Psalm 138:2.

***“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends” John 15:13***



## Handley Page Halifax

**Introduction – “Cyril Barton Believed in God”** [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cyril\\_Joe\\_Barton](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cyril_Joe_Barton)

RAF Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC was a true disciple of Christ. PO Barton was awarded the VC posthumously for his last operational flight over Germany on March 30<sup>th</sup> 1944. He was captain and pilot of a Handley Page Halifax heavy bomber and his actions testified to the Lord’s words in John 15:13 ***“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.”***

PO Barton’s life and testimony could be summed up by the words *“Cyril Barton Believed in God.”*

Those five words begin the chapter on Pilot Officer Cyril Barton VC in the book *VC’s of the Air* by John Frayn Turner published in 1960. Frayn Turner gives summary accounts of the 32 airmen from Britain and the Old Dominions who won the Victoria Cross in WW2. Only seven survived the war. Cyril Barton, as indicated, was not among them. He was 22 years of age when he died.

### A Personal Note

This writer received the book *VC’s of the Air* as a Christmas present in 1960. It is very possible that his salvation seven years later was in part the result of the chapter on Pilot Officer Barton VC.

***“Confession is made unto salvation” Romans 10:10***

Cyril Barton was born in Suffolk but grew up in Surrey where he attended Kingston-on-Thames technical college. On graduation from college Barton became apprenticed to an aircraft factory and continued his studies in the evenings. He lived in New Malden and attended church and Bible class regularly. When his class leader asked Cyril *“Do you know Christ as your personal Saviour?”* Barton answered *“Yes.”* Cyril had fulfilled Romans 10:10 ***“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.”***



### **“Thou shalt be his witness” Acts 22:15**

Acts 22:15 states **“For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.”** Cyril Barton was. He bore witness to his friends at Youth Services, taught Sunday School and joined in open-air witness. Frayn Turner said he *“tackled some of the toughest types in the area, bringing them into the services.”* Then in September 1939, things changed radically.

### **“Snared in an evil time” Ecclesiastes 9:12**

Ecclesiastes 9:12 states **“as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare; so are the sons of men snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon them.”** That was what befell the WW2 generation. Cyril was able to join the RAF early in 1941. After a period of training and non-operational duties, he made his first operational flight in July 1943. By March 1944 he'd made 18 operational flights and been promoted to Pilot Officer. He was, however, concerned about maintaining a stronger Christian Witness.

### **“Let your light so shine” Matthew 5:16**

The Lord Jesus Christ said **“Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven”** Matthew 5:16. Barton had said in a letter *“I felt that my witness was not as vigorous as it should be, and I knew if I didn't do anything about it I would only slip back.”* He asked for prayer, especially from his girlfriend, Doreen. God answered.

On Sunday evening March 26<sup>th</sup> 1944 Barton got back from church to the quarters that he shared with the other two officers in his crew. They were stationed near Selby. He wrote on March 28<sup>th</sup> *“I said I would be off the “intercom” for ten minutes and knelt by my bed. J very reverently turned down his favourite radio programme and an awkward hush settled on the room. The Lord was very real to me for a few minutes, and I was very thankful to Him for bringing me through.”* The others tried to act normally but when they all turned in Cyril had to remind J to switch off his radio.

### **“The fiery trial” 1 Peter 4:12 [www.raf.mod.uk/bombercommand/mar44.html](http://www.raf.mod.uk/bombercommand/mar44.html)**

1 Peter 4:12 says **“Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.”** The fiery trial came on March 30<sup>th</sup> 1944 with the Nuremberg raid. The *Bomber Command* site states that 795 aircraft set out. 95 were lost. It was one of the heaviest Allied losses of the war. Night fighters repeatedly attacked Barton's aircraft. 70 miles from the target an engine was badly damaged, the communications were shot out, fuel tanks were punctured and the turret machine guns disabled. Owing to a confusion of signals, Barton's navigator, wireless operator and bomb aimer parachuted out of the aircraft. Barton nevertheless pressed on to the target and released his bombs. He and his three remaining crew members then faced a 4½ hour journey home on three engines into strong headwinds without navigational aids. As Barton wrenched the heavy Halifax around, the damaged propeller flew off. Providentially it missed the aircraft. Barton held course as best he could and crossed the English coast near Ryhope Colliery, 90 miles north of his base. Then with fuel almost gone, two engines stopped and the aircraft was now too low for the men to leave safely by parachute. Barton ordered his crew *“Take up crash stations.”* He struggled to avoid some miners' cottages and then the Halifax fell to earth. The three other crew members aboard the Halifax survived and the three who had baled out were taken prisoner so Barton alone died in the crash. He had fulfilled John 15:13 **“Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.”**

### **Last Letter Home and “all things well” Mark 7:37**

Barton had given a letter to his brother, who was saved, to give to his mother if he was killed. It begins *“Dear Mum, I hope you never receive this but I quite expect you will.”* It ends with *“Your loving son, Cyril.”* He also wrote to Doreen. In part the letter to his mother says [AFCU/OCU *Contact* magazine, spring 1992] *“Except for leaving you...death holds no terrors for me. I know I shall survive the judgement because I have trusted in Christ as my Saviour. All that I am anxious about is that you and the rest of the family will come to know Him...I commend my Saviour to you.”* Maybe other members of the family did get saved. Barton is buried in Bonner Hill Road Cemetery, Kingston-upon-Thames and the family's personal message on Cyril's headstone is Romans 8:28 **“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God.”** That is, **“whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's”** Romans 14:8. That's reassuring. Amen.

**Timothy the Faithful – “O man of God” 1 Timothy 6:11**  
**“Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ”**  
 2 Timothy 2:3.



**“Thy servant slew both the lion and the bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be as one of them, seeing he hath defied the armies of the living God” 1 Samuel 17:36<sup>47</sup>**

**Picturing 2 Timothy 2:3, 1 Samuel 17:36 is a “Timothy” called at age 20 to:**

- **“endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ”**
- face **“the lion and the bear”** and the **“Philistine”**
- be faithful **“that thou...mightest war a good warfare”** 1 Timothy 1:18:

*“A flood of thoughts came across my mind regarding the different fields I had fought on, and the many hair-breadth escapes I had had. I thought of the Alma and my Christian comrade who lay buried beside the river. I thought of the wild charge of our handful of cavalry at Balaclava, of our desperate fight at Inkerman, of our terrible work in the trenches. And after all I had gone through - death staring me in the face in a thousand shapes, both in the field and in camp, for upwards of twelve long months...yet a merciful God had thought fit to throw His protecting arm of love around me - truly I had much for meditation; verily I had much to be thankful for...” – Sergeant Major Timothy Gowing, Royal Fusiliers<sup>48</sup>.*

Like David and S/mjr. Gowing, Timothy did **“endure hardness,”** face **“the lion and the bear”** and the **“Philistine”** and **“war a good warfare.”** *If you will, Timothy’s your man ☺!*





## Timothy the Follower

Timothy means *Honouring God*<sup>49</sup>, from his full name “***Timotheus***,” found 17 times in scripture. The embedded word “*theus*” is God. With God in his name, Timothy followed God in his life. He alone is called “***O man of God***” 1 Timothy 6:11 in the New Testament.

Timothy was from Lystra in Asia Minor and Paul first meets him in Acts 16:1. “***Then came he to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek:***”

Thank God for “***a certain woman...which believed.***” Paul identifies her in 2 Timothy 1:5. “***...I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.***” Timothy became a follower of the Lord via believing generations. “***You may be the first link in a person’s conversion, you may be the last link. Make sure you’re not the missing link!***”<sup>50</sup>

## Timothy the Fellowlabourer

Timothy became a “***fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ***” 1 Thessalonians 3:2 but some things threatened his labour. Timothy’s *past life* threatened his labour<sup>51</sup>. Galatians 3:28 says “***There is neither Jew nor Greek...in Christ Jesus***” but Acts 16:3 states “***Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.***” Self-explanatory. Timothy therefore overcame his *past life* to be a “***fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ.***”

Timothy’s *ill-health* threatened his labour. Paul even advises him in 1 Timothy 5:23 “***Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach’s sake and thine often infirmities.***” Yet Paul says of Timothy in Philippians 2:22 “***he hath served with me in the gospel.***” Timothy therefore overcame his *ill-health* to be a “***fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ.***”

Timothy’s *fear of shame* threatened his labour. Paul urges him in 2 Timothy 1:8 “***Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God;***” Foxe<sup>52</sup> states that Timothy was Bishop of Ephesus in A.D. 97. There he rebuked a procession of pagans, like a Notting Hill Carnival, for their idolatry. They beat him to death. Timothy therefore overcame his *fear of shame* to be a “***fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ***” no matter what.

So despite *your past*, *ill-health*, *fear*, whatever, *you can be* a “***fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ***” because the Lord said “***Be of good cheer; I have overcome the world***” John 16:33.

## Timothy the Faithful

Paul writes in 2 Timothy 3:10-11 “***But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.***”

The 9 aspects listed may be 9 roots for the 9 fruits of Galatians 5:22, 23. Fruitfulness comes from faithfulness. Timothy was faithful because he *lived through* experiences like 2 Timothy 3:10-11 with Paul and he did “***endure hardness,***” face “***the lion and the bear***” and the “***Philistine***” and “***war a good warfare.***” He could say with Paul in 1 Timothy 1:12 “***And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry;***” So, how are you “***counted...faithful***”?

Being “***counted...faithful***” includes *cross-generation witness* like Lois to Eunice to Timothy, as Paul says in 2 Timothy 2:2 “***And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.***”

Being “***counted...faithful***” also includes *learning* “***the holy scriptures***” 2 Timothy 3:14-15:

**“But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus”** 2 Timothy 3:14-15.

The hymn *My Mother’s Bible* is Timothy’s Testimony:

***My Mother’s Bible***<sup>53</sup>

*Blessèd Book, precious Book,  
On thy dear old tear stained leaves I love to look;  
Thou art sweeter day by day, as I walk the narrow way  
That leads at last to that bright home above*

What Book is that? See below:



**“And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals”** Revelation 5:1.

COUNT THEM! Then:

**“Fear God, and give glory to him”**  
Revelation 14:7 – not the publisher!

*“A Bible that’s falling apart usually belongs to someone who isn’t”*  
- Charles Haddon Spurgeon<sup>54</sup>.

Paul therefore exhorts Timothy in 2 Timothy 2:15. It should be memorized:

**“Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.”**

You must rightly divide the Book<sup>55</sup> because you must learn it - THE BOOK is:

The Timothy’s Charter: *How to Follow, Work, Wage War, Be Faithful.*

May it be yours.

## Acts 8v37 - Why this SHOULD be in the Bible!

*Writer's Note 2016:* The following note was sent to church leadership on August 28<sup>th</sup> 2011 with respect to the validity of Acts 8:37 ***“And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God”*** which a visiting speaker to the church had impugned from the church's pulpit. No reply was ever received.

Dear \*\*\*\*\*

...I am writing briefly to draw attention to a matter that I noted in Mr \*\*\*\*\*'s message last Sunday, w.r.t. Acts 8:26-40, in particular Acts 8:37.

I appreciate that in a sense, the matter is water under the bridge now but hopefully the brief points that follow will be considered should the above Acts passage, in particular Acts 8:37, be addressed in any future ministry of the church.

Mr \*\*\*\*\* made reference to Acts 8:37 as not being in the oldest manuscripts and not part of 'the original' or words to that effect.

Had he limited his comments to the above statement, I would not have raised this matter. Any speaker can give an incorrect report, depending on the sources he consults. It's happened to me. The simple truth is that Acts 8:37 is scripture, with an unbroken testimony to its validity from the 2nd century AD onwards and God's blessing of Reformation and Revival on the Bibles that contain it, e.g. all those of the 16th century English Protestant Reformation. Even the versions that omit it imply the validity of Acts 8:37, because they don't change the verse numbering system, although it would obviously be very easy to do so in this particular instance, if their editors genuinely believed that Acts 8:37 is spurious\*.

\*Various objections to Acts 8:37 have been raised. I believe that it is possible to answer them all satisfactorily [2016 update: See attached information following this note].

What was real cause for concern to me (and hence this note) was the statement in the message to the effect that the passage loses nothing if Acts 8:37 is cut out because the Ethiopian clearly believed and was saved.

On the contrary, the passage loses everything with respect to Christian salvation if Acts 8:37 is lost.

Significantly, the word "believed" is lost. Without Acts 8:37, it can only be inferred that the individual "believed" anything with respect to salvation (apart from the supposed need for baptism – see comments that follow). It can equally be inferred that belief in the Lord Jesus Christ is not necessary for salvation.

Needless to say, that is a most serious error but it is a possible error if Acts 8:37 is cut out of the account.

Equally significantly, it is known why Acts 8:37 is missing from most Greek manuscripts, including the Catholic manuscripts alluded to but not identified on pages 1024, 1073 of the church bibles [2016 update: 1984 NIVs with reference to Mark 16:9-20, John 7:53-8:11].

Acts 8:37 was dropped from successive copies of Greek manuscripts by the monkish forbears of those who are now Greek Orthodox priests (as well as by the Catholic forbears), such that it is now omitted by most extant Greek manuscripts, for the majority of which the Greek Orthodox Church is the custodian, notably at St Catherine's Monastery at the foot of Mt. Sinai.

The reason is that the Greek Orthodox Church teaches that only baptism and communion are necessary for salvation, not belief on the Lord Jesus Christ. Omission of Acts 8:37 provides this church with the necessary justification for this false teaching (as with the Catholic Church, its members

don't readily "Search the scriptures" John 5:39). Once this false teaching is established, it becomes straightforward to impose infant baptism.

The Greek Orthodox manner of infant baptism is even more heinous than that of the Catholic Church. I think it amounts to ritualistic satanic child abuse. It is likely that the young women in the church who work with children would be moved to tears if they knew the details.

All of this is written up in the book *Hazardous Materials*, by Gail Riplinger, pp 745ff, ISBN 978-0-9794117-6-2.

I fully appreciate that no-one in the church is likely to be led astray by the false doctrines of infant baptism and baptism as part of salvation but, as indicated, I think that it is useful for the church to be informed of the underlying issues.

Yours in the Lord Jesus Christ

Alan O'R

2016 Update: The following information on the validity of Acts 8:37 as it stands in the AV1611 has been inserted below.

See [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) 'O Biblios' – The Book p 56.

### Acts 8:37

**“And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God”** is omitted by the RV, Ne, NIV, NKJV f.n., JB, NJB, NWT.

Hills [*The King James Version Defended* 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition, [wilderness-cry.net/bible\\_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html](http://wilderness-cry.net/bible_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html)] p 201, [*Believing Bible Study* 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition] p 197, explains that the verse is absent from most Greek manuscripts because the practice of delaying baptism following profession of faith had become common before the end of the 3<sup>rd</sup> century. However, the verse is found in uncial E (6<sup>th</sup>-7<sup>th</sup> centuries), the Old Latin (2<sup>nd</sup> century) and the Vulgate (5<sup>th</sup> century) and is cited by Irenaeus (180 AD) and Cyprian (250 AD). See also Ruckman [*Problem Texts, 2016 update: Now The “Errors” in the King James Bible* pp 333-334] p 331, [*The New ASV - Satan's Masterpiece* Dr Peter S. Ruckman] pp 19-20. Ruckman (*The Book of Acts* p 291) also cites Tertullian (2<sup>nd</sup> century), Pacian (370 AD), Ambrose and Augustine (4<sup>th</sup> century) as knowing of the verse.

Even though the verse is not in the Majority Text, Berry's Greek text supports the AV1611, indicating the familiarity of the 16<sup>th</sup> century editors with the ancient evidence in support of the verse<sup>\*2012</sup>.

<sup>\*2012</sup>Dr Mrs Riplinger in *Hazardous Materials* pp 745ff explains how Acts 8:37 was dropped from successive copies of Greek manuscripts by the monkish forbears of those who are now Greek Orthodox priests (as well as by the Catholic forbears) in order to support their false doctrine of baptismal regeneration, especially with respect to infant baptism.

See also Will Kinney's detailed article [brandplucked.webs.com/articles.htm](http://brandplucked.webs.com/articles.htm) *Acts 8:37...Scripture or Not?*

The following material is included from 'O Biblios' – The Book pp 253-255 to show how **“the scripture of truth”** Daniel 10:21 **“maketh the judges fools”** Job 12:17 with respect to Bible critics with particular application to Acts 8:37.



### 14.3 Acts 8:37

Our critic's next attack on the Holy Bible is against Acts 8:37, Section 7.3. He states that "*Uncial E of the 8<sup>th</sup> Century is the earliest known Greek MS to include this passage. It is basically a Western addition and is omitted from P45 (early 3<sup>rd</sup> Century) and the earliest uncials. The grammatical construction of the Ethiopian's confession is quite un-Lukan. There is no reason at all why scribes should have omitted this material if it had stood originally in the text. It possibly began as a marginal gloss.*"

Note that our critic gives no evidence for Acts 8:37 being "a Western addition" or originating "as a marginal gloss." Neither does he explain why, if the reading was false, the NIV etc. retain the verse numbering sequence of the AV1611. He continues "*Prominent among those early Fathers who quote the verse are those whom you describe as the "Founding Fathers of the Roman Church"...The verse is not in the Alexandrian family or even the Byzantine! It found its way into the received text and hence into the KJV via Erasmus who...took the words from the margin of another manuscript.*"

In answer I shall quote first from Dr Hills [[The King James Version Defended 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition, wilderness-cry.net/bible\\_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html](http://wilderness-cry.net/bible_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter8.html)] p 201 "As J. A. Alexander (1857) suggested, this verse, though genuine, was omitted by many scribes, "as unfriendly to the practice of delaying baptism, which had become common, if not prevalent, before the end of the 3<sup>rd</sup> century.""

Dr Hills has advanced a good reason "why scribes should have omitted this material," if they were not Bible believers. Our critic has overlooked this. Dr Hills continues:

"Hence the verse is absent from the majority of the Greek manuscripts. But it is present in some of them, including E (6<sup>th</sup> or 7<sup>th</sup> century). It is cited by Irenaeus (c. 180) and Cyprian (c. 250) and is found in the Old Latin and the Vulgate. In his notes Erasmus says that he took this reading from the margin of 4ap and incorporated it into the Textus Receptus." Dr Ruckman [[The Christian's Handbook of Biblical Scholarship](http://The Christian's Handbook of Biblical Scholarship)] p 316, places E in the 8<sup>th</sup> century but in the 6<sup>th</sup> to 7<sup>th</sup> century in an earlier work [[Problem Texts](http://Problem Texts)] p 331.

Our critic therefore adds little or nothing to the information which I summarised in Section 7.3. The difference is that Dr Hills acknowledges the graciousness of "divine providence" in supplying ALL of the New Testament from several sources, Section 9.6. By contrast, our critic seems ready to reject such providence if it did not see fit to locate a reading in the text with, in his opinion, "better credentials". See Section 9.3.

As for the lack of the verse in particular "families", although this classification is often used for convenience [[wilderness-cry.net/bible\\_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter5.html](http://wilderness-cry.net/bible_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter5.html) *The King James Version Defended 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition,*] p 120, it is nevertheless a HOAX, Section 9.4.

In reference to the "un-Lukan" grammar of the Ethiopian's confession, why wouldn't it be "un-Lukan" if indeed it is? The man speaking was an AFRICAN. The man writing the Book of Acts was a JEW! See Romans 3:1-2. Even though our critic is referring specifically to grammar, I am reminded of Dr Hills's statement [[The King James Version Defended 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition, wilderness-cry.net/bible\\_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter6.html](http://The King James Version Defended 3rd Edition, wilderness-cry.net/bible_study/books/kjv-defended/chapter6.html)] p 158, "Arguments from literary style are notoriously weak." I continue with Dr Ruckman [[The Christian's Handbook of Biblical Scholarship](http://The Christian's Handbook of Biblical Scholarship)] pp 236-237:

"Those who first threw (Acts 8:37) out were P45 and P74, followed by the Cult (Sinaiticus, Vaticanus, "C", the Sahidic, and the Bohairic; and then the Harclean and Peshitta Syriac, after Origen messed with them). It is also missing from cursives 049, 056, 0142, 436, 326, 1241, 1505, 2127, 181, 81, 88 and several others.

"To offset this vast array of African scholarship produced by half-baked apostates, we have the verse, in whole or in part, in the works of Irenaeus (190 A.D.), Tertullian (200 A.D.), Cyprian (255 A.D.), Pacian (370 A.D.), Ambrose, uncial manuscript E, Old Latin manuscripts, Old Syriac manu-

scripts, plus the Armenian and Georgian translations. It is also found in cursive 629...(from) the dates of the Church Fathers listed above, we find the verse being quoted 100 to 200 YEARS BEFORE SINAITICUS OR VATICANUS WERE WRITTEN.

“So, we quote it 100 years AFTER the REVISED VERSION of Hort fell to pieces with the British Empire. (Why give up a good thing just because a destructive critic doesn’t like it?)”

Why indeed? Dr Ruckman [[Problem Texts](#)] p 331 states that Acts 8:37 “has an unbroken chain of testimony from the Old Latin (second century)...to the present time.” Reviewing the evidence therefore, one finds that Acts 8:37, like 1 John 5:7-8, fulfils at least 5 of Burgon’s 7 tests.

Cursive 629 also has 1 John 5:7-8 in its margin...no doubt also by God’s gracious provision. Our critic again resorts to misrepresentation in attacking this verse. He states “**Once again it has to be said that the idea that challenging the authenticity of this verse is to question the importance of personal salvation is utterly ludicrous.**”

I put forth no such “idea” at all in Section 7.3. What I said was “*Note that Luke 23:42, John 9:35, Acts 8:37 and 9:5, 6 are all passages which deal with INDIVIDUAL SALVATION*”. FIVE verses were cited, not ONE. (I could have added a sixth, Acts 16:31, where “**Christ**” is omitted by the DR, RV, NIV, JB, NJB, NWT, Ne thanks as usual to L, T, Tr, A, Section 11.4). If our critic had read my statement carefully and LOOKED AT THE VERSES, he would have seen that they deal with THE SALVATION OF INDIVIDUAL SOULS, two of whom were saved by the LORD JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF!

I was not referring to the “subject” of “personal salvation” in the abstract - of which our critic does not cite even ONE of the “**hundreds of statements**” in the New Testament that he insists deal with it, according to this section of his document. The critics obviously mutilated verses which gave specific examples of SOUL-WINNING. Whatever their “motives” in so doing - and these may have been as sincere as Eve’s, Genesis 3:6! - their ACTIONS and the RESULTS of those actions are ABOMINABLE!

Our critic then states “**Incidentally some of the manuscripts which have Acts 8:37 also have in v. 39 “the Spirit of the Lord fell upon the eunuch”** and poses the question “**Why is this not in the KJV?**”

*There are at least three good reasons.*

1. The AV1611 translators, being much more scholarly than the modern translators and endowed with much greater spiritual wisdom, Luke 21:15, were able to discern between the authentic reading and the false one. Lacking this discernment, the modern translators rejected BOTH readings.
2. The spurious reading in Acts 8:39 no doubt lacks number, respectability, continuity and variety of witnesses. It may also lack antiquity and the context, as defined by Burgon [[True or False? 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition David Otis Fuller, D.D.](#)] pp 264 ff, may be suspect. Typically, our critic does not state which manuscripts contain the spurious addition to Acts 8:39.
3. There are two references in the Book of Acts to the Holy Ghost falling upon individuals, Acts 10:44, 11:15. They deal with incidents in Acts 2:3, 4 and 10:44. In each case there were Jews present and the gift of TONGUES was manifested, magnifying God as a SIGN to these Jews, 1 Corinthians 1:22, Acts 2:5-11, 10:45-46, 11:17-18. In Acts 8:39 NEITHER condition applies and therefore internal considerations mitigate against the reading.

The reading therefore fails 5 TO 7 of Burgon’s tests and is therefore rightly rejected.

See [When the KJV Departs from the “Majority” Text](#) by Dr J. A. Moorman pp 60-61 for detailed listing of the witnesses for Acts 8:37 as it stands in the AV1611.

## The Martyrs' Hymn – “We Rest On Thee”

### The Martyrs' Hymn

We rest on Thee, our Shield and our Defender!  
We go not forth alone against the foe;  
 Strong in Thy strength, safe in Thy keeping tender,  
We rest on Thee, and in Thy Name we go.  
 Strong in Thy strength, safe in Thy keeping tender,  
We rest on Thee, and in Thy Name we go.



J. J. Sibelius  
1865-1957

2 Chronicles 14:11

And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, it is nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on thee, and in thy name we go against this multitude. O LORD, thou art our God; let not man prevail against thee.

### FINLANDIA

#### Introduction – Leighton Ford, 1959

This writer's introduction to The Martyrs' Hymn really goes back to 1959, the year of the first Billy Graham Crusade in Sydney. In addition to the main meetings, members of the Billy Graham team preached in schools, including this writer's, visited by Leighton Ford. He spoke of some missionaries who “ended their lives face down in a river with spears in their backs.”

#### Jack and May Griffin

Another eight years passed before this writer got saved through the Australian Navigator ministry in 1967 but that ministry came about through the salvation at the 1959 Billy Graham Crusade of a then 47 year-old businessman named Jack Griffin, now with the Lord, and his wife May. This writer's salvation therefore goes back to that of Jack and May Griffin at the 1959 Billy Graham Crusade in Sydney and in turn to Jack and May's daughter Gloria, who prayed for her parents for 9 years, trusting in Luke 1:37 “**For with God nothing shall be impossible.**” It was through The Navigators that this writer learnt of the missionaries that Ford spoke of and The Martyrs' Hymn.

#### The Five Ecuadorian Martyrs

The Cyberhymnal site says of the hymn *We Rest On Thee* that “This hymn<sup>56</sup> has a sad story associated with it. In January 1956, five missionaries sang it before entering the Ecuadorian jungle to bring the Gospel to the Auca Indians. They were Nate Saint, Ed McCully, Jim Elliott, Roger Yoderian, & Peter Fleming. After the men reached the Aucas, the Indians murdered them on the Curaray River. However, the story has a happy ending. Years later, contact with the Aucas was re-established, and many came to Christ, including the killers, which is how first hand details of the missionaries' deaths came to light.”

Ever since then, the hymn *We Rest On Thee* has been associated with those five missionary martyrs and is, in this writer's view, rightly called The Martyrs' Hymn. This writer has always appreciated The Martyrs' Hymn because it has a worthy tune (many hymns don't in this writer's view) and its lyrics are soundly scriptural. That is easily shown, especially insofar as the line "*We rest on thee, and in Thy Name we go*" is taken from 2 Chronicles 14:11. Let's look at each clause.

### **"We rest on thee"**

The expression "*We rest on thee*" brings to mind what the Lord Jesus Christ said in Matthew 11:28-29. "**Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.**" The Lord Jesus Christ said that and nobody laughed<sup>57</sup>, because his listeners saw that the Lord did "**speak forth the words of truth and soberness**" Acts 26:25 and even His enemies who heard Him reported that "**Never man spake like this man**" John 7:46. That was true because no man ever did, or has. Mohammed didn't, Marx didn't, Engels didn't, Einstein didn't, Darwin didn't and Dawkins wouldn't dare. Pope Leo XIII said that "*We hold upon this earth the place of God Almighty*"<sup>58</sup> but no pope ever said what Jesus Christ said about "**rest unto your souls.**" Whatever their following, those others couldn't deliver "**rest unto your souls**" to their followers. The Lord Jesus Christ can, and does, according to Philippians 4:6-7, which should be memorised. "**Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.**"

### **"And in Thy name we go"**

The second clause follows on from the first by means of the little word "***and***," which is right and proper because resting on the Lord Jesus Christ is not idleness or inactivity. It is a secure foundation for whatever God then wants you to do. The Great Commission as given in Matthew 28:18-20 illustrates this principle. "**And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.**" Note, when you see a "***therefore***" in scripture, look for what it is there for, the term "***always***" means all the way and the important end word "***Amen***" means to "***say so too***" according to 1 Kings 1:36. The going, teaching, baptizing and observing in carrying out the Great Commission rests *therefore* wholly upon the Lord's assurance that "***All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.***" His assurance is for "***always***," all the way and it is underscored by the promised "***Amen.***" That is no doubt how the five Ecuadorian martyrs applied the scripture in the hymn from 2 Chronicles 14:11 "***we rest on thee, and in thy name we go.***"

However, going "***in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ***" a phrase found 3 times in scripture, 1 Corinthians 5:4, Ephesians 5:20, 2 Thessalonians 3:6, is not solely for the big picture, like the Great Commission. It is for the entire Christian walk, as Paul shows right after his conversion in Acts 9:6. "**And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.**" Be sure you have Acts 9:6 whole (KJB), un-mutilated (NIV mutilates) and undisputed (NKJV disputes). It sums up resting, going and ministering "***in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.***"

### **An Early Missionary "in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ"**

The missionary theme of The Martyrs' Hymn points to the next and last hymn in this series, about an early missionary, who definitely rested on and went in "***thy name***" as will be seen next time.



---

## References

- <sup>1</sup> *Final Authority*, p 182. Note that in an otherwise excellent account of the post-1611 history of the KJB, Dr Grady refers incorrectly to missionary John Paton with respect to the mission work on Tierra del Fuego, which was begun by Captain Allen Gardiner RN
- <sup>2</sup> [www.cms-uk.org/Whoweare/History/SAMStimeline/tabid/511/language/en-GB/Default.aspx](http://www.cms-uk.org/Whoweare/History/SAMStimeline/tabid/511/language/en-GB/Default.aspx)  
[www.archive.org/details/romance\\_missionaryheroism\\_0910\\_librivox](http://www.archive.org/details/romance_missionaryheroism_0910_librivox), 17 – *The Sailor Missionary of Tierra del Fuego*  
[www.victory-cruises.com/allen\\_gardiner2.html](http://www.victory-cruises.com/allen_gardiner2.html)
- <sup>3</sup> [www.victory-cruises.com/allen\\_gardiner2.html](http://www.victory-cruises.com/allen_gardiner2.html)
- <sup>4</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodom\\_and\\_Gomorrah](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sodom_and_Gomorrah)
- <sup>5</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-17375736](http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-17375736)
- <sup>6</sup> [www.chick.com/reading/tracts/1070/1070\\_01.asp](http://www.chick.com/reading/tracts/1070/1070_01.asp)
- <sup>7</sup> [www.familyresearchinst.org/2009/02/pro-gay-bias-in-study-of-pedophilia/](http://www.familyresearchinst.org/2009/02/pro-gay-bias-in-study-of-pedophilia/)
- <sup>8</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peter\\_J.\\_Gomes](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peter_J._Gomes)
- <sup>9</sup> [www.nytimes.com/2011/03/02/us/02gomes.html?\\_r=0](http://www.nytimes.com/2011/03/02/us/02gomes.html?_r=0)
- <sup>10</sup> [www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-26793127](http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-26793127)
- <sup>11</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/alan-oreilly/) *The Cry of Sodom*
- <sup>12</sup> [www.chick.com/reading/tracts/5003/5003\\_01.asp](http://www.chick.com/reading/tracts/5003/5003_01.asp) *Sin City*
- <sup>13</sup> *The Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman p 126. All subsequent references to Dr Ruckman's work in this work are from his Reference Bible. See Reference 14 for consecutive page numbers.
- <sup>14</sup> *The Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 169, 278, 818, 1468, 1662-1663
- <sup>15</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/)
- <sup>16</sup> [www.bryanrawlings.com/](http://www.bryanrawlings.com/), [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Royal\\_coat\\_of\\_arms\\_of\\_the\\_United\\_Kingdom](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Royal_coat_of_arms_of_the_United_Kingdom)
- <sup>17</sup> [mb-soft.com/believe/txc/thirtyni.htm](http://mb-soft.com/believe/txc/thirtyni.htm)
- <sup>18</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crown\\_Jewels\\_of\\_the\\_United\\_Kingdom#Crowns](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crown_Jewels_of_the_United_Kingdom#Crowns)
- <sup>19</sup> [jmarkbertrand.typepad.com/bibledesign/2008/01/r-l-allans-oxfo.html](http://jmarkbertrand.typepad.com/bibledesign/2008/01/r-l-allans-oxfo.html)
- <sup>20</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible* pp 231-232, 242
- <sup>21</sup> [sheikyermami.com/2011/01/24/italy-convert-or-else/](http://sheikyermami.com/2011/01/24/italy-convert-or-else/)
- <sup>22</sup> *Slavery, Terrorism & Islam* by Peter Hammond, ISBN 0-9584549-8-1, Chapters 2-4
- <sup>23</sup> *Who is this Allah?* by G.J.O. Moshay, ISBN 0-9518386 1 X, pp 25, 33, 45
- <sup>24</sup> *Operation Nehemiah, The Way Ahead* by Patrick Sookhdeo, [www.barnabasfund.org](http://www.barnabasfund.org), pp 7, 34
- <sup>25</sup> [atlasshrugs2000.typepad.com/atlas\\_shrugs/2006/02/danish\\_cartoons\\_1.html](http://atlasshrugs2000.typepad.com/atlas_shrugs/2006/02/danish_cartoons_1.html)
- <sup>26</sup> [www.guardian.co.uk/uk/july7](http://www.guardian.co.uk/uk/july7),  
[www.bbc.co.uk/london/content/articles/2007/07/11/kurt\\_surviving\\_bombers\\_feature.shtml](http://www.bbc.co.uk/london/content/articles/2007/07/11/kurt_surviving_bombers_feature.shtml)
- <sup>27</sup> [barnabasfund.org/UK/Act/Campaign/Operation-Nehemiah/Campaign-updates/Islamist-group-pilots-sharia-controlled-zone.html](http://barnabasfund.org/UK/Act/Campaign/Operation-Nehemiah/Campaign-updates/Islamist-group-pilots-sharia-controlled-zone.html)
- <sup>28</sup> [www.gatestoneinstitute.org/3682/uk-sharia-courts](http://www.gatestoneinstitute.org/3682/uk-sharia-courts)
- <sup>29</sup> [www.cbc.ca/news/world/benedict-xvi-installed-as-pope-1.530518](http://www.cbc.ca/news/world/benedict-xvi-installed-as-pope-1.530518)
- <sup>30</sup> [nobeliefs.com/nazis.htm](http://nobeliefs.com/nazis.htm)
- <sup>31</sup> [www.infowars.com/top-nazis-planned-eu-style-fourth-reich/](http://www.infowars.com/top-nazis-planned-eu-style-fourth-reich/), [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flag\\_of\\_Europe](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Flag_of_Europe),  
[www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/columnists/christopherbooker/8627942/Will-we-one-day-see-the-EUs-ring-of-stars-waving-over-Lords.html](http://www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/columnists/christopherbooker/8627942/Will-we-one-day-see-the-EUs-ring-of-stars-waving-over-Lords.html)
- <sup>32</sup> [www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/codex\\_magica/codex\\_magica28.htm](http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/codex_magica/codex_magica28.htm)
- <sup>33</sup> *'Holy War' Against South Africa* by Shaun Willcock, ISBN 978-1-920411-40-4
- <sup>34</sup> [www.zionism-israel.com/ezine/IsllamReligionofPeace.htm](http://www.zionism-israel.com/ezine/IsllamReligionofPeace.htm)
- <sup>35</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/LGBT\\_symbols#Lambda](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/LGBT_symbols#Lambda)
- <sup>36</sup> [www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2290824/Queen-fights-gay-rights-Monarch-makes-historic-pledge-discrimination-hints-Kate-DOES-girl-means-equal-rights-throne.html?ITO=google\\_news\\_rss\\_feed&ns\\_mchannel=rss&ns\\_campaign=google\\_news\\_rss\\_feed&google\\_editors\\_pics=true](http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2290824/Queen-fights-gay-rights-Monarch-makes-historic-pledge-discrimination-hints-Kate-DOES-girl-means-equal-rights-throne.html?ITO=google_news_rss_feed&ns_mchannel=rss&ns_campaign=google_news_rss_feed&google_editors_pics=true)
- <sup>37</sup> *In Awe of Thy Word* by G. A. Riplinger [www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html](http://www.avpublications.com/avnew/home.html) pp 81-82



- 
- <sup>38</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible*, p 1638
- <sup>39</sup> *The Oxford Bible Reader's Dictionary & Concordance*
- <sup>40</sup> *Dr D. A. Waite and The Dead Bible Society* [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/james-white-dr-divietro-and-dawaite.php) p 6
- <sup>41</sup> [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Civil\\_War\\_%28TV\\_series%29](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Civil_War_%28TV_series%29)
- <sup>42</sup> Web references for Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joshua\\_Chamberlain](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joshua_Chamberlain), [www.cafepress.com/+joshua-lawrence-chamberlain+gifts](http://www.cafepress.com/+joshua-lawrence-chamberlain+gifts), [july1863.homestead.com/daytwo.html](http://july1863.homestead.com/daytwo.html)
- <sup>43</sup> [dragon1st.tripod.com/cw/files/jlc1.html](http://dragon1st.tripod.com/cw/files/jlc1.html)
- <sup>44</sup> *Army Life A Private's Reminiscences of The Civil War* by Rev. Theodore Gerrish, late a member of the 20<sup>th</sup> Maine Vols., [archive.org/details/armylifeprivates00gerr](http://archive.org/details/armylifeprivates00gerr), p 108
- <sup>45</sup> [www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/](http://www.timefortruth.co.uk/why-av-only/) *Royal Law – James 2:8*
- <sup>46</sup> [kjv.benabraham.com/html/chapter-10.html](http://kjv.benabraham.com/html/chapter-10.html)
- <sup>47</sup> *David Kills a Lion and a Bear Pictures*, Google search
- <sup>48</sup> *Voice from the Ranks, A Sergeant-major's account of the Crimean campaign* by Timothy Gowing
- <sup>49</sup> *The New Compact Bible Dictionary*
- <sup>50</sup> Jack Griffin, *Sydney Navigators*, d. 1973, direct quote
- <sup>51</sup> *Ruckman Reference Bible*, Bible Baptist Bookstore, 2009, p 1460
- <sup>52</sup> *Fox's Book of Martyrs* edited by William Byron Forbush, Zondervan, 1967, p 7. See also [en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Saint\\_Timothy](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Saint_Timothy)
- <sup>53</sup> *My Mother's Bible* by Milan B. Williams, 18983, [www.hymntime.com/tch/htm/m/y/m/mymother.htm](http://www.hymntime.com/tch/htm/m/y/m/mymother.htm)
- <sup>54</sup> *Bibles Falling Apart Images*, Google search, p 55, [notdepthnorheight.tumblr.com/post/1203156292/a-bible-thats-falling-apart-usually-belongs-to](http://notdepthnorheight.tumblr.com/post/1203156292/a-bible-thats-falling-apart-usually-belongs-to)
- <sup>55</sup> *Pastoral Epistles* by Dr Peter S. Ruckman, Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1989, pp 220-225
- <sup>56</sup> [www.hymntime.com/tch/htm/w/e/r/wereston.htm](http://www.hymntime.com/tch/htm/w/e/r/wereston.htm)
- <sup>57</sup> *CD Gospel According to John*, John 7:22-53 by Dr Peter S. Ruckman
- <sup>58</sup> [www.chick.com/reading/tracts/0071/0071\\_01.asp](http://www.chick.com/reading/tracts/0071/0071_01.asp) *Are Roman Catholics Christians?*